974.4
M386c
Ser.3 ,v.7
1169686

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01101 0326

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2013

http://archive.org/details/collectionss3v7mass

COLLECTIONS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS

HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

VOL. VII.

OF THE THIRD SERIES.

BOSTON,
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.
1838.

BOSTON:
PRINTED BY FREEMAN AND BOLLES,
WASHINGTON STREET.

CONTENTS.

1169686

Account of the Massachusetts Historical Society, . . . 5
"A Word to Boston," by Gov. Bradford, ... 27
Forefather's Song, ... 29
Model of Christian Charity, by Gov. Winthrop, . . . 31
Post Office Department, ... 48
D'Aulney and La Tour, ... 90
Lord Protector's Order, ... 122
Whalley and Goffe, ... 123
Instructions to Randolph, ... 129
Commission to Sir Edmund Andros, ... 139
Papers Relative to his Administration, ... 150
Higginson Letters, ... 196
Colonel Quarry's Memorial, ... 222
Rev. Mr. Bacon's Letter respecting Isaac Allerton, . . . 243
Memoranda of Beverly, ... 250
Memoir of Rev. John Hale, ... 255
Memoir of Rev. Dr. Holmes, ... 270
Dr. Mease's Description of old American Coins, . . . 282
Bill of Mortality for the City of Boston, 1837, ... 284
List of Portraits in the Hall of the Historical Society, . . 285
Acknowledgment of Donations, ... 292
Letter from Alden Bradford, Esq., pointing out Errata, . . 296
Letter from Judge Davis respecting Allerton, ... 301

OFFICERS

OF THE

MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

ELECTED APRIL 26, 1838.

PRESIDENT.

Hon. THOMAS L. WINTHROP, L. L. D.

RECORDING SECRETARY.

JOSEPH WILLARD, Esq.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

Rev. CHARLES LOWELL, D. D.

TREASURER.

Hon. JAMES SAVAGE.

LIBRARIAN.

Rev. THADDEUS MASON HARRIS, D. D.

CABINET KEEPER.

ISAAC P. DAVIS, Esq.

STANDING COMMITTEE.

Hon. JAMES SAVAGE,
N. G. SNELLING, Esq.
Rev. CONVERSE FRANCIS, D. D.
Rev. ALEXANDER YOUNG,
Rev. JOSEPH B. FELT.

NOTICE.

The Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society have been classed in series, each comprising ten volumes; and the present volume is the seventh of the third series.

The volumes are sold at the very moderate price of one dollar, neatly done up in boards. The whole set, or any single volume, may be had on application at the Library, over the Savings Bank, Tremont Street, or of C. C. Little & Co., Booksellers, No. 112 Washington Street, Boston.

HISTORICAL COLLECTIONS.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE MASSACHUSETTS HISTORICAL SOCIETY.*

[Prepared by William Jenks, D. D., a member of the Society.]

The common remark, that no nation can trace so readily and accurately its origin, as ours, has been grounded, no doubt, on the consideration of the progress of European society at the time our country was discovered. The three centuries and a half, which have now nearly elapsed since that period, have formed, comparatively, times of light, and mutual influence, in the history of mankind. By printing, extended navigation, and commercial treaties, the nations have apparently approximated each other; and it would seem, that, even of necessity, the history of each must be recorded and known.

But, in fact, the preservation of the particulars involved in the progress of any people, is a distinct and definite labor for some individual, or association, appropriately devoted to the subject. Official documents must, indeed, in civilized nations, exist; but these are necessarily meagre and restricted, or formal and uninteresting: and the historian is compelled to gather his materials from a wide surface, and to welcome the intelligence derived

* The Rev. Dr. Cogswell, one of the editors of the American Quarterly Register, having applied for *a memoir of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, for insertion among the interesting statistics of that highly respectable periodical publication, the Rev. Dr. Jenks was appointed to prepare one; and, by a subsequent vote, the Publishing Committee were directed to include it in the forthcoming volume of the Collections.—*Pub. Com.*

from the more private memoir, as well as the public record.

If such observations apply even to the old establishments of Europe and Asia, in which the series of public documents and private memoirs, has, in so many instances, been kept almost unbroken ; it may easily appear, that the difficulties attending the often perilous work of colonization, succeeded by the alteration of character and pursuits in the descendants of original colonists, must enhance the labor of collecting materials for historical use.

Thus, for instance, in the settlement of New England, we should imagine that, engaged in as it was when science and literature had produced their wonders at Oxford, Cambridge, and other seats of learning in the mother country, no material fact would pass without observation, nor fail to be transmitted to our times. And it is, indeed, a subject for gratulation, that several of the actors in the busy scenes of that day were qualified by education and experience for the task. Thus was the illustrious WINTHROP, first governor of Massachusetts, and so were several of his associates. But, not being at once intrusted to the press, for no press had been erected, their memorials, in their single preciousness, were exposed to the ravages of fire, the negligence and indifference of subsequent possessors of them,* and the innumerable "changes and chances" of an emigrant's fortunes.

The Rev. Dr. COTTON MATHER prepared several memorials, especially of an ecclesiastical character, at a period tolerably early, while yet many of the first race of immigrants were alive. But his desultory manner of writing, much like a modern review, did not allow him to establish his narratives by a severe attention to dates and historical facts, nor to give attention to statistical details. Valuable as are many of the materials he has left us, we are grieved

* The fate, for instance, of the learned President *Chauncy's* MSS. as related in *Allen's* Biographical Dictionary is in point. A member of the Historical Society, not many years ago, had been promised, on his application for that purpose, the indulgence of examining a barrel or two of ancient papers. in a neighboring town, belonging to a family descended of the early settlers. "They are now," said the lady, "in the garret—an unfit place for you to enter ;" and the inspection was deferred. On calling again, he had the mortification to learn, that, as the occupants had been repairing the house, these papers, being found in the way, had the day before been committed to the flames !

to think how much he might have done for our history, and has yet neglected.

Similar remarks might apply to GOOKIN,* and HUBBARD,† and to MORTON,‡ to ELIOT,§ and WILLIAMS,‖ whose works have been, either by members of this Society, or by the Society itself, reproduced to the public ; and it was not until the time of HUTCHINSON,¶ that a history at all worthy of the subject appeared before the world.

Previously, however, to the accomplishment of any portion of this labor, the Rev. Mr. PRINCE,** had, with indefatigable zeal, and at no inconsiderable expense, collected a mass of documents in reference to the country, both in printed works and MSS. Early in life he had conceived the idea which he labored to embody in his "New England Library." Of this valuable collection, which suffered

* *Gookin's* "Historical Collections of the Indians in New England," rich as they are in details, yet leave much to inquire for. Happily, another work of his has, at length, after lying long in England, been published in the Transactions of a sister society here.

† See *Savage's* Winthrop, I. 296, 7.

‡ The remarks, however, may not be thought applicable to the edition of *Morton* with which we are now favored from a discriminating, industrious, and learned editor, who has so greatly enriched it with his notes. Judge DAVIS's edition of the "Memorial" was published in 8vo. 1826.

§ Few particulars, comparatively, of a historical kind, are gleaned from the productions of this eminently pious, devoted and successful missionary and pastor. Like the primitive Christians, his effort was rather "to live, than to record, great things."

‖ The remark just made in reference to "the apostle Eliot" may apply to Roger Williams, several of whose letters, autograph MSS. were contained in a volume of the Trumbull collection belonging to the Historical Society, which perished in the conflagration of November 10, 1825. He has found, however, able biographers in the late Rev. Dr. *Bentley* and Rev. Prof. *Knowles*.

¶ In the highly valuable notes with which Mr. Savage has accompanied his edition of Gov. Winthrop's History, will be found an appreciation of Hutchinson's merits as an accurate, laborious, and well-informed historian. Two volumes of his History of Massachusetts, with an Appendix of important documents, had been printed before his departure for England. Within a few years, the concluding volume has been published there. It seems desirable, that an American edition of the whole, with additional notes, should appear. It is believed, that a proposition of this nature was not long since made to our eminent jurist, Judge STORY, whose engagements have not allowed him to give the project attention. Could it engage, as successfully as did the History of Winthrop, the learned labor of the diligent antiquary who so happily edited that work, the writer doubts not that the public and himself would have no cause for regret. Much and steady light, in addition even to MINOT and BRADFORD's Histories, will, we may anticipate, be thrown on the stirring period of Hutchinson's life, when we shall possess the long expected, entire collection of the works of the elder President ADAMS, preparing, as is understood, by his distinguished son.

** Mr. *Prince's* historical work, the New England Chronology, with the additional numbers designed for a second volume, has been faithfully edited by a member of the Historical Society, the Hon. N. HALE, 8vo. 1826. But for most of what may be important in relation to Mr. Prince, the writer must gratify himself by referring to the excellent "History of the Old South Church," by his late beloved Christian brother, the lamented Dr. WISNER.

the predatory and destructive violation of a barbarous soldiery during the revolutionary war, a portion only remains, divided between the study of Mr. Prince's successor, and the library of this Society. To the latter destination have been consigned, by loan, or deposit, such portions of these treasures as were deemed essential in a historical view, or valuable as books of reference.*

The destruction, by fire, of the ancient, original library of Harvard college, in 1764, and the dispersion, or destruction, by a mob, of the valuable collection of books and MSS. in the hands of governor Hutchinson,† some of which belonged to the State, but were loaned for the completion of his History, must have irrecoverably deprived the country of many precious records. It is not, therefore, to be wondered at, that literary men, who reflected on all these and many other losses, sustained in various ways, should desire a place of deposit for whatever scattered remains might be yet accumulated, and an association to preserve and use them.

It is difficult, if not impracticable, to discover, at the present period, the actual germ of the Society, in the first thought, intention, or effort of any individual mind. Mr. WALLCUT, the only survivor of the first ten who associated, does not sustain the claim made for him by the late Dr. Snow,‡ and by Dr. Allen. The writer will, therefore, avail himself of the reminiscences and minutes of his valued friend, the Rev. Dr. HARRIS, better able, perhaps than any one now living, to ascend to the fountain head of the institution, having taken a very early and deep interest in its success.

The Rev. Dr. BELKNAP has been uniformly regarded as a principal founder of this Society. His valuable History of New Hampshire had been written under great disadvantages, and published with inadequate patronage. The labor of twenty-two years, as he states, was devoted to it; and in his last volume, published in 1793, nine years after

* The deposit of these selected volumes and MSS. was made in 1814, under a specific and recorded agreement. The selection was confided to the late Rev. Dr. HOLMES and ALDEN BRADFORD, LL. D. In effecting the object, Dr. HARRIS also had, from the first, been deeply interested and active.

† See *Holmes's* Annals, and *Eliot's* Biographical Dictionary.

‡ History of Boston. p. 356. Pres. Allen's Biographical Dictionary, art. Belknap.

the first, it is said, that the sale of the preceding volumes had not defrayed the expense of publication. He had been at great cost, of time and labor at least, in amassing the materials for his work. Several of these were now his own—others were, of course, in public offices.

Dr. BELKNAP, by the interest of friends who knew his worth, had been transferred from his parish in New Hampshire, and had become a pastor in Boston; and he, having "engaged in preparing his American Biography, and Hon. GEORGE R. MINOT," the elegant historian of the Insurrection in Massachusetts, "who was occupied in writing a continuation of Hutchinson's History, had frequent occasion in 1789," observes Dr. HARRIS, "of conferring together with reference to materials to be consulted. They knew that the Rev. Dr. ELIOT* possessed the MS. of Hubbard's History; that Rev. Dr. THACHER had the diary of his ancestor, a very early settler; and concluded that Hon. JAMES WINTHROP, of Cambridge, retained papers of his ancestor, the governor, and of other branches of that celebrated family. To have a place of common deposit of such documents, for ready access and consultation, they proposed to these gentlemen to unite with them, in contributing and collecting aids to their own labors and those of others." In 1790, therefore, a meeting was holden, the day however is not given, to agree on the object. Five gentlemen were present, and the Society, it appears, was then virtually formed. But on separating, at the adjournment, each agreed to bring a friend to the next meeting. Accordingly, on the 24th of January of the next year, ten persons met, and embodied themselves with due formality. The Hon. Judge TUDOR, Rev. Drs. BELKNAP, THACHER and ELIOT, and Judge WINTHROP, attended the first informal meeting: and at the embodying were present, beside them, Rev. Dr. FREEMAN, Judge MINOT, Hon. W. BAYLIES, of Dighton, Judge SULLIVAN, and Mr. WALLCUT. Yet, in the printed paper inserted in

* The writer ought never to name this amiable and accomplished scholar, and modest, benevolent man, his early patron and friend, without grateful emotions. Dr. ELIOT says of himself, that "his taste always led him to collect curious MSS. and ancient books;" and that "he was favored with many letters of the Hutchinson and Oliver families." His venerated father had been an attentive collector of similar documents, and enjoyed the correspondence of HOLLIS, with occasional accessions to his library from a source so munificent.

their volumes, the "establishment" of the Society is dated 1790.

Judge SULLIVAN, afterward governor of the Commonwealth, was chosen President, Mr. WALLCUT,* Recording Secretary, Dr. BELKNAP, Corresponding Secretary, Judge TUDOR, Treasurer, and Dr. ELIOT, Librarian.

The OBJECTS of the association were, not only to collect and to preserve, but also to communicate such materials as might be procured for a complete history of this country, with its topography, natural productions, and aborigines, as also a view of all valuable efforts of ingenuity and industry made by its inhabitants, with biographical and statistical delineations, and accounts of institutions of a benevolent or literary kind, or in any manner connected with the welfare of the country, and illustrating the progress of its civilization and prosperity, in arts or science, and in agriculture, commerce, or manufactures.†

In pursuance of their plan, the associates began their collection, consisting at first of mutual contributions of books, MSS. and such articles of curiosity, connected with their object, as were offered by their friends. We regard with astonishment the immense collections of books in Europe—and are mortified on comparing with them the

* This gentleman early occupied himself in collecting books and MSS., and, by copying, which was with him a favorite idea, to multiply the chances that a rare or unique document should descend to posterity. The far greater part of this collection is now, by the liberality of the late owner, the property of the American Antiquarian Society, and a part has gone to Bowdoin college.

† The following is a copy of the original record, in which, with peculiar elegance of language, the aim and design of the Society are developed.

"The preservation of books, pamphlets, manuscripts and records, containing historical facts, biographical anecdotes, temporary projects, and beneficial speculations, conduces to mark the genius, delineate the manners, and trace the progress of society in the United States, and must always have a useful tendency to rescue the true history of this country from the ravages of time, and the effects of ignorance and neglect.

"A collection of observations and descriptions in natural history and topography, together with specimens of natural and artificial curiosities, and a selection of every thing which can improve and promote the historical knowledge of our country, either in a physical or political view, has long been considered as a desideratum; and as such a plan can be best executed by a society whose sole and special care shall be confined to the above objects: We the subscribers do agree to form such an institution, and to associate for the above purposes, subject to the following regulations.

"ARTICLE 1. This Society shall be called the Historical Society, and consist of a number not exceeding thirty, (*a*) who shall, at the time of their election, be citizens of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

"ART. 2. That each member, at the time of his admission, shall pay five dollars

(*a*) Enlarged, subsequently, and "sixty" substituted.

scantiness of our own literary resources. Yet it is to be remembered, that ages alone have sufficed to amass the former—and that public acts of the respective governments have successively augmented them. Thus the Royal Library of Paris, the first establishment of the kind in Europe, is indebted to a law of near three centuries' continuance, that a copy of every work he publishes be presented to it by each bookseller. With such aid, the increase is no marvel.* But, in relation to the collection now contemplated, it commenced with private efforts of men of restricted means.

"Their meetings were first held in the office of Judge MINOT, in Spring lane. But, being liable to interruption there, they obtained the use of a small apartment in Faneuil Hall, being the north-west corner of 'the attic,' a place," says the writer's authority, "as retired and recondite, as explorers into the recesses of antiquity could think

and two dollars annually, to create a fund for the benefit of the institution. And any member shall be exempted from the annual payment of two dollars, provided he shall, at any time after six months from his admission, pay to the treasurer thirty-four dollars in addition to what he had before paid.

"ART. 3. All elections shall be made by ballot. No member shall nominate more than one candidate at the same meeting, and all nominations shall be made at a meeting previous to that at which the ballot is to be taken.

"ART. 4. There shall be four stated meetings of the Society in each year, namely, on the last Tuesdays of January, April, July and October. And occasional meetings shall be convened on due notification from the president, or, in case of his absence, by one of the secretaries, upon the application of any two of the members.

"ART. 5. There shall be annually chosen, at the meeting in April, a president, a recording and corresponding secretary, a treasurer, a librarian, and a standing committee of three.

"ART. 6. All communications which are thought worthy of preservation, shall be entered at large, or minuted down in the books of the Society, and the originals kept on file.

"ART. 7. At the request of any two members present, any motion shall be deferred to another meeting for further consideration before it is finally determined upon.

"ART. 8. All accounts shall be kept in dollars and cents.

"ART. 9. Five members present shall be a quorum for all purposes, excepting those of making alterations in, or additions to the foregoing Articles, and the election of members.

"ART. 10. No member shall be chosen unless there are eight members present at the election.

"ART. 11. The first Article shall not restrict the Society from electing corresponding members in any other State or country.

"ART. 12. The members who are chosen in other States and countries shall not exceed the number of thirty, (*a*) and shall not be required to make contribution with the members who are citizens of the Commonwealth.

* See a valuable paper on libraries, and the poverty of our own, in the July No. (1837) of the North American Review.

(*a*) Altered, as before; and several articles have been altered also, or enlarged, as became requisite.

of visiting." * In a few months, however, after this removal, they were accommodated in the building originally erected for the proposed linen factory, † in which the Massachusetts Bank transacted business.

Their literary materials increasing, they were anxious to present them to the public in a permanent form. But it was "the day of small things," and the means were wanting for publication. In this emergency, it was proposed by Dr. Belknap, in the autumn of 1791, to encourage a periodical contemplated by two young men, ‡ just commencing the business of printing. Accordingly, in a sheet attached to the "American Apollo," which made its appearance weekly, in 1792, commencing with the year, the publications of the Society began, and thus was completed the first volume of their "Collections." These now amount to twenty-six volumes, divided into series of ten volumes each, denominated decades, the last volume of each decade containing the index of the series. As they were originally printed in small editions, several of the volumes have, of necessity, been re-commited to the press. Still it is difficult to obtain the set complete.

In order to forward the designs of the Society, their Corresponding Secretary had already addressed to many gentlemen, throughout the United States and the adjacent islands, the following "Circular Letter," with its accompaniment :

"Sir,

"A Society has lately been instituted in this town, called the Historical Society ; the professed design of which is, to collect, preserve, and communicate materials for a complete history of this country, and accounts of all valuable efforts of human ingenuity and industry, from the beginning of its settlement. In pursuance of this plan, they have already amassed a large quantity of books, pamphlets, and manuscripts ; and are still in search of more : a catalogue of which will be printed for the information of the public.

* Notes of Rev. Dr. Harris.
† Where Hamilton place now is, in Tremont street.
‡ Messrs. Joseph Belknap and Alexander Young.

"They have also given encouragement to the publication of a weekly paper, to be called the AMERICAN APOLLO; in which will be given the result of their inquiries into the natural, political, and ecclesiastical history of this country. A proposal for the printing of this paper is here inclosed to you; and it is requested that you would promote subscriptions, and contribute to its value and importance by attention to the articles annexed. The Society beg leave to depend on your obliging answer to these heads of inquiry, when leisure and opportunity will permit.

"Your letters addressed, free of expense, to the subscriber, will be gratefully received, and duly noticed in the Society's publications; and you will have the satisfaction of contributing to the general stock of knowledge, with which they hope to entertain the public.

"In the name, and by order of the Society,

"JEREMY BELKNAP, Cor. Sec.

"*Summer street, Boston, Nov.* 1, 1791."

"*Articles on which the Society request information.*

"1. The time when your town was granted and incorporated; its Indian name; when the settlement began; whether it was interrupted, and by what means; to what colony or county it was first annexed; and if there have been any alterations, what they are, and when made.

2. The exploits, labors and sufferings of the inhabitants in war; particular accounts of devastations, deaths, captivities and redemptions.

3. Divisions of your town into parishes and precincts, or the erection of new towns within the former limits.

4. Time of gathering churches of every denomination; names of the several ministers; the times of their settlement, removal and death; and their age at the time of their death.

5. Biographical anecdotes of persons in your town, or within your knowledge, who have been remarkable for ingenuity, enterprise, literature, or any other valuable accomplishment; an account of their literary productions, and, if possible, copies of them.

6. Topographical description of your town and its vicinity ; mountains, rivers, ponds, vegetable productions ; remarkable falls, caverns, minerals, stones, fossils, pigments, medicinal and poisonous substances, their uses and antidotes.

7. The former and present state of cultivation, and your thoughts on further improvements, either in respect to agriculture, roads or canals.

8. Monuments and relics of the ancient Indians ; number and present state of any remaining Indians among you.

9. Singular instances of longevity and fecundity, from the first settlement to the present time.

10. Observations on the weather, diseases, and the influence of the climate, or of particular situations, employments and aliments, especially the effect of spirituous liquors on the human constitution.

11. Accurate bills of mortality, specifying ages and casualties, the proportion of births and deaths ; and the increase or decrease of population.

12. Accounts of manufactures and fisheries, and thoughts on the further improvement of them.

13. Modes of education, private or public ; what encouragement is given to schools ; and what is done to advance literature ; whether you have a social library, what is the number of books, and of what value.

14. What remarkable events have befallen your town, or particular families or persons at any time.

P. S. Any books, pamphlets, manuscripts, maps or plans, which may conduce to the accomplishment of the views of the Society ; and any natural or artificial productions which may enlarge its museum, will be accepted with thanks.

The library of the Society is deposited in an apartment of the Massachusetts Bank. Any person desirous of making a search among the books or manuscripts, may have access to it, under such regulations, and at such hours, as may be known by applying to any one of its members."

Circulars, of import similar to this, with further enlargements, have been, since that period, repeatedly distributed

among gentlemen of science, or of curious research, and have occasionally elicited very valuable communications.

Three centuries having elapsed, in 1792, from the first discovery of America, the Society resolved to notice the period.* Dr. BELKNAP was therefore appointed to deliver a discourse on the 23d of October. This was done, and the discourse printed—remaining a pleasing monument of the fine talents and diligent investigations of the author; who gives, within its covers, the public notice of his having advanced in preparing the volumes of his "American Biography," † with proposals for subscription.

At the close of 1793, when the "Tontine Crescent" had been nearly finished, a room was most liberally offered to the Society by WILLIAM SCOLLAY, CHARLES BULFINCH, and CHARLES VAUGHAN, Esquires, the gentlemen under whose superintendence the erection had been effected. It was in the centre of the block, in Franklin place, over the Boston Library. The noble donation was gratefully accepted, and the public letter of thanks bears date January 11, 1794. It follows.

"Gentlemen,

"Your obliging letter of the 31st of December last, offering to the Massachusetts Historical Society a room in the centre building of the Crescent, I have communicated to the Society. That association had its origin in a sincere wish to promote the honor and happiness of United America, and the labor of its members has been, and now is, employed with unremitting zeal and industry, in collecting and preserving those materials, which will give a foundation to a political, as well as a natural history of the country. Our fellow citizens, recognising the utility of our plan, have been very liberal and assiduous, in yielding us assistance and support. By these means we have amassed a great number of books, printed productions, ancient manuscripts, and natural curiosities. The government of this Commonwealth has directed the Secre-

* Centurial celebrations have since received the marked attention of the Society, as in 1820 at Plymouth, and in 1828 at Salem, &c.

† Two volumes only have been published; the first in 1794, and the second in 1798; but it is understood that no inconsiderable progress was made before the author's decease toward a third volume.

tary to deliver us copies of public proceedings ; and we hope that the general, and other governments, will afford us aid and countenance in the same manner.

"Thus situated, and with these prospects, nothing could be more congenial to our wishes, or acceptable to our interest, than the generous offer you have made. We derive no small degree of pleasure from the consideration, that the donation is made by gentlemen, whose feelings for the public interest, and taste for architecture, have ornamented the capital with buildings so exceedingly elegant as the Crescent.

"I am directed by the Society, of which I have the honor of being president, to present to you their most cordial thanks for this mark of respect to their institution ; and to assure you, that a grateful sense of your generosity and goodness shall be preserved until the Society shall cease to exist.

"I have the honor to be, gentlemen, with sentiments of respect, your most obedient and humble servant,

"James Sullivan."

This room continued to be occupied by the Society until 1833. The situation, however, having been thought to expose the Society too much, from the difficulty of approach, to the irreparable loss of its acquisitions in case of fire, various efforts had been made by special committees* at different times, to obtain a place more commodious in its access, and promising greater safety ; but with no favorable result, until the erection, on the spot originally occupied by the Boston Athenæum, of the substantial stone building which now accommodates that invaluable institution, the Savings Bank. By a subscription of several members, aided more largely by generous friends, who appeared to feel that the object was of high public utility, arrangements were then effected,† by which an entire story, besides a convenient upper room, was devoted to the increasing treasures of the Society, and appropriately fitted for the purpose.

* The Hon. Mr. Quincy, especially, was for years, and more particularly during his mayoralty, desirous and engaged to produce a mutual accommodation for several of the literary and scientific associations, whose seat is the metropolis.

† At a cost of $6,500.

But we must return. The prospect of a location which, at the time it was made, was so very acceptable to the Society, drew forth the desire, and established the propriety of petitioning for an act of incorporation. As early, indeed, as July, 1792, the subject was agitated ; it was assigned to a committee in January, 1793 ; but at the meeting which voted thanks for the room, and prepared for securing to the Society, and occupying it, the matter was expedited with new spirit ; and on the 19th of February, 1794, granted in ample form by the legislature.

In this act of incorporation, the following twenty-nine resident members, the number of which the Society then consisted, are legally embodied, viz. William Baylies, Esq., Jeremy Belknap, D. D., the Rev. Alden Bradford, Peleg Coffin, Esq., Rev. Manasseh Cutler, LL. D., John Davis, Esq., Daniel Davis, Esq., Aaron Dexter, M. D., the Rev. John Eliot, Nathaniel Freeman, Esq., the Rev. James Freeman, the Rev. Thaddeus Mason Harris, Isaac Lathrop, Esq., George Richards Minot, Esq., the Rev. John Mellen, Jun., Thomas Pemberton, William Dandridge Peck, the Rev. John Prince, Ezekiel Price, Esq., James Sullivan, Esq., David Sewall, Esq., Rev. Peter Thacher, D. D., William Tudor, Esq., Samuel Turell, Dudley Atkins Tyng, Esq., James Winthrop, Esq., Thomas Wallcut, Redford Webster, and William Wetmore, Esq. With the usual provisions, they are allowed to hold real estate producing an income of £500 per annum, and personal estate, beside books, papers, and articles in their museum, to the amount of £2,000. Their number is not to exceed sixty, exclusive of honorary members residing out of the Commonwealth ; and the legislature reserves to each of its branches free access to the library and museum.

Soon after the incorporation, the circular letter was enlarged with new particulars, and directions given for the preservation of subjects in natural history, which were requested afresh, and with new urgency, from the animal, vegetable and mineral kingdoms, together with books, pamphlets, manuscripts, &c. to enrich the cabinet and library.

The story of the building, now appropriated to the objects of the Society, consists of a hall and the library room.

In the former is found a number of ancient and modern portraits. Those of the families of Winslow,* and Phillips, beside several single portraits, as of Increase Mather, Gov. Hutchinson,† Gen. Lincoln, Lafayette, at an early period of life, Gov. Wolcott, the Hon. Judge Davis, recently president of the Society, and the Hon. T. L. Winthrop, the present President, will attract attention. That of the first Gov. Winslow, of the "Old Colony," is peculiarly masterly, and supposed to have been painted by Vandyke, while Mr. Winslow was in England as a commissioner.‡

It is very desirable that this department be increased. The portraits of governors of the Commonwealth, so judiciously hung in the senate-chamber of the State-house, with the large and valuable exhibition of a similar kind made in the library of Harvard college, and the few in Faneuil hall, where a series of the mayors of Boston might well be looked for, excite the wish, that public places may become more and more ornamented with the products of the pencil and burine, to transmit to other times the features of worthy men. How large the catalogue may be of such reliques, the writer has no means of knowing; but our "guide books," as in old countries, must soon be expected to declare. Doubtless there are not a few yet existing on sufferance in many private families, which would be very acceptable to the community, if in some similar way rendered public and stationary.

The library consists principally of printed books and MSS. on American history, though by no means exclusively confined to it. It numbers near 6,000 articles, many of which are precious. The most ancient MSS. are, probably, a fragment of the Laws of Hoel Dha, in Welsh, and a specimen, in a medical treatise, of the English language in the reign of Richard II., with an illuminated missal, and a few similar productions.§ Then follow autograph letters and treatises of several of the fathers of New England.

* These are, at present, but deposited with the Society.

† Believed to be unique, and as such solicited by the family in England, as a loan, for copying.

‡ A list of the principal portraits is intended for this Volume. [*Pub. Com.*

§ The Publishing Committee would mention, also, a very ancient manuscript of 552 pages, neatly written, containing *a translation of the Æneid of Virgil in blank*

A large collection of these, and of documents of a more recent date, had been made by Gov. Trumbull of Connecticut, and are now bound in twenty-three volumes, folio, the property of this Society.

It is not to be supposed, that, how important soever a collection of documents of a religious nature might be regarded, the Society limits itself to these. Yet as a large part of the early authors of our country were clergymen, and the original establishments in New England were made on religious accounts, it is not surprising that no inconsiderable portion of the publications and MSS. possessed by the Society are of an ecclesiastical nature. Still the collection is very imperfect; and our Congregational body of churches are but very scantily furnished with materials for their history. The attested records of ecclesiastical councils, and the particulars of ordinations, are often suffered to rest with the neglected papers of individual clergymen, and undergo the usual fate which awaits "old and musty writings, relating only to the dead, and of no use to the living." It were to be wished, that the safe keeping of these and similar memorials might be uniformly entrusted to the archives of the Society. The subject has been repeatedly suggested in private, has been laid before the convention of ministers, and by a special committee presented to several of the more ancient churches—to obtain, if no more, the copies of church records. The value of all these documents may at some time be great—especially to the future ecclesiastical historian.

Several periodicals have at different times been undertaken and failed, while others have survived, and still flourish. Some of these are found in the library. But it is still very defective; and complete sets, desirable as the acquisition might be, are now, it is feared, to be rather wished and hoped for, than expected.

Newspapers have been greatly desired, and sedulously, at an early period of the Society's labors, sought after and

verse, by ANNIBAL CARO. This celebrated author died at Rome in 1566. His Poems and Sonnets were much admired, and appeared at Venice in 1564: and the "Eneide di Virgilio," was published at Paris in 1765, [two hundred years after the death of the author] in 2 vols. 4to, and the following commendation is given of it:—"This translation of the Æneid is done with so much spirit, that some judges have declared the composition scarcely inferior to the original."

solicited; yet the collection is far from complete. Nevertheless, there are some, especially such as relate to the progress of the revolutionary struggle, which have often been consulted; and for minute, local information, highly prized. Several editors have contributed to increase this stock, and receive, as they merit, public thanks for their liberality. Perfect files, of the earliest especially, young as our country is, are, perhaps, hardly, if at all, to be found. An eminent foreigner,* and the fact is curious, has been among the most successful single collectors of these flitting leaves; and, thanks to the liberality of a Boston merchant,† the results of his care enrich the library of our University. The Antiquarian Society also has a very large collection‡—but that of this Society was, of course, at an earlier period of avail to the community.

The public documents of the general government, which have of recent years been transmitted from Congress, are a valuable part of the Society's treasures; which have been occasionally increased, though, it is feared, not uniformly, by the legislature of Massachusetts.

No small attention has been paid to the collection of maps, charts, and plans—of which the number is very respectable, and has been of public use, as well as an essential aid in private researches.

The publications of the Society have consisted almost entirely of its well-known "Collections." These, as has been stated, now extend to two decades, and six volumes of a third. They are in an 8vo form, and by their convenient size, and cheapness of execution, are better calculated, it is judged, for a wide and beneficial circulation, than the more stately and expensive volumes of the older European establishments of scientific and literary character. They embrace, of course, a great variety of miscellaneous information on almost all topics connected with the history, not of the United States only, or of their colonial condition, from the settlement of the respective States, but of the continent likewise—and even occasion-

* Ebeling. † Mr. Thorndike.

‡ Made originally by the distinguished printer, Isaiah Thomas, Esq., LL. D., its first president, whose extensive connections and long editorial labors gave him great advantages, and which has been subsequently increased.

ally of the mother country, and others in Europe, so far as their relation demands.

In such a field, it would be presumptuous in the writer of this "account" to attempt a discrimination, with regard either to the productions, or their respective authors. Many pages, however, of the volumes, consist of republications of treatises out of print, and more, of valuable MSS. of former days. In procuring these, the industry and care of many members of the Society, and the kindness of friends, have been conspicuous. The particular merits of every worthy contributor it were invidious to attempt to ascertain ; nor can the value, indeed, of the materials themselves be fully appreciated in the present day. They have, in many cases, been absolutely rescued from destruction, and a future age alone will develope their worth.

By the liberality of the late governor GORE, who was president of the Society from 1806 to 1818, a large addition has been made to the library from his own collection, and a bequest of $2,000, increased, very acceptably, its funds.

From the present president of the Society, a donation of several ancient books and papers of the family of WINTHROP, enriches, with other important benefactions, the Society's treasures—among which may be numbered a copy of the portrait of his illustrious ancestor, the first governor of Massachusetts, to the publication of whose journal, or history, his respected descendant largely contributed.

The zeal of ALDEN BRADFORD, Esq., LL. D., one of the few survivors among its earliest members, and a large contributor to the history of his country,* as well as to the Collections of this Society, induced him to obtain from the government of the State permission to extract from the Hutchinson papers in the Secretary's office such as the Society might deem worthy of publication. The MSS. also

* Dr. Bradford's separate historical publications are, A Collection of State Papers, 8vo, 1818. History of Massachusetts, from 1764, the period to which Judge Minot carried his Continuation of Hutchinson, to July, 1775, published in 1822. A second volume carried the history to 1789. History of Massachusetts from 1620 to 1820, in one volume, 8vo, and the History of Harvard College, published in the Quarterly Register recently.

of the DANFORTH family were procured by him, and placed in the archives of the Society.

The original arrangement of the library, and the first formation of its catalogue, were mainly due to the persevering industry of Rev. TIMOTHY ALDEN,* recently president of Alleghany College, but at that time residing in Boston, and to his beloved and lamented friend, the late Rev. Dr. McKEAN.†

The recovery of our Indian languages, a labor which has been with so much ardor and success prosecuted by M. DU PONCEAU,‡ in reference to the Delaware, has engaged the special attention of the Hon. Judge DAVIS, president, of late, of the Society, and of the Hon. J. PICKERING, Esq., some of whose labors in this field enrich the volumes of the Society's Collections. Indeed, such recovery has been deemed, by some, but a duty due to the memory of those whose pleasant land we occupy, and whose welfare employed the benevolent exertions of ELIOT, GOOKIN, the MAYHEWS and COTTONS, the memorials of whose deep interest in the aborigines may be said to hallow the Collections themselves. It may also in this connection be remarked, that some of the remains of our Indians, are found in the cabinet of curiosities, which the Society is forming. It is to be lamented that they are so few. But when the perishable nature of their productions is considered, and their wandering mode of life, it will easily appear, that little beside their tools and weapons could be expected to remain. Of these there are several, and they are mingled with similar proofs of industry and skill obtained by early navigators to the north-west coast of America, and presented by several of our enterprising merchants. The cabinet, however, has not grown rap-

* In imitation of Weever's Funeral Monuments, which, with antiquaries, are in no small repute, Mr. Alden has published five small volumes of a Collection of Epitaphs. These establish obituary dates, and have allowed opportunity for occasional biographical sketches, the work admitting of indefinite enlargement.

† He was taken away at a comparatively early age from a circle of strongly attached friends—few of whom have had greater reason than the writer to cherish his memory. He is understood to have been the author of an Addition to Wood's Continuation of Goldsmith's History of England, published in two large 8vo volumes, 1814. He was also the biographer of Rev. Dr. Eliot; see Historical Collections, volume i., second series.

‡ See the volumes of the American Philosophical Society for these labors of their greatly distinguished president.

idly—and much of the cause, perhaps, may be found in an increasing desire to acquire and preserve such specimens in the different museums, which have from time to time been formed and patronized—a result of the very kind the Society desires to witness.

The funds for the progress and support of the Society's designs, have been obtained in part from annual assessments on the members, partly from the sale of the "Collections," and in no small degree from the liberal contributions of its more wealthy members. In consequence also of the delivery of a series of lectures on historical subjects, during the evenings of a few past winters, by some of the distinguished friends or members of the Society,* an addition has been made to its pecuniary resources. The legislature has likewise purchased for distribution in the several towns of the Commonwealth, some hundreds of copies of the Society's edition of Hubbard's History, and of the Journal of Governor Winthrop, or, as it is more properly to be styled, his "History of New England," the latter edited, and greatly enriched with most valuable notes, by the present treasurer of the Society, the Hon. JAMES SAVAGE.

It has been said already, that it were an invidious task to particularize and discriminate, in mentioning the literary labors of members of the Society ; yet, as several have been already named, a few further references may seem absolutely requisite. Thus, it is not to be overlooked, even in the present sketch, that, the attention of the legislature having been drawn, about twenty years ago, to the condition of the public records of the "Old Colony" of Plymouth, a commission was instituted, of members of this Society, viz. the late Rev. Dr. FREEMAN,† SAMUEL

* From the avails of the lectures, the amount which has thus far been paid into the treasury is but little short of $1,000.

† Few of the members have taken a deeper or more persevering concern in the interests of the Society than the gentleman now named. With his theological views the writer will not be expected to harmonize. Yet will he never forget the obligations under which he has been laid by the early and effective frendship and urbanity of this studious and accurate scholar and honest man. Dr. FREEMAN was peculiarly attached on the "Old Colony," the seat of his family, and illustrated its local history in various communications, scattered through the Collections of the Society. He was also known to have made a very considerable preparation of geographical materials in reference to the United States, and his review of MORSE's Geography is not forgotten.

Davis, Esq., recently deceased, and B. R. Nichols, Esq., "to examine the said records, files, and documents,—and to report how far, in their opinion, it may be proper to have the same deposited in the archives of the Secretary of State, for the use of legislators, historians, and antiquarians; and how far it may be useful to multiply copies of the whole." They reported, that "it would be of benefit to the present age, and still more to posterity, to cause a fair transcript to be taken, and copies to be multiplied by printing the most useful articles." The result has been, the transcription of a mass of these records, amounting to eleven folio volumes, which are now deposited, with the twenty-two volumes of original records, in the office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth.* To have aided in such an arrangement is gratifying, as is the contemplation of the attention paid by enlightened legislators† to preserve and diffuse an accurate knowledge of the settlement and growth of our country.

One great and important work, achieved by a distinguished and beloved member of this Society, the late Rev. Dr. Holmes, for several years its Corresponding Secretary, must not be passed in silence. His "American Annals," an edition of which has been published in England, will remain a highly creditable and valuable monument, not merely of accurate and laborious research, sound judgment, and inviolable fidelity, but of patriotism also and philanthropy; and while it illustrates the history of his country, from its discovery down to our times, will not fail to spread the reputation of the author, and endear his memory.

The History of Maine,‡ by the late governor Sullivan, and his account of the Penobscotts,§ are an important

* See an account of this commission, &c. in vol. ii., 3d series, Hist. Coll. p. 258, seq.

† Under the authority and patronage of the legislature, a publication has recently been made, by W. Brigham, Esq. of the most material parts of these documents, in a legal view. Similar publications have been in progress for several years in England, with splendid results; and France is now re-publishing her ancient original historians.

‡ It is an interesting literary fact, that, on the completion of this work, its author disposed of the copyright for $200, which he presented to the Society.

§ See Collections of Massachusetts Historical Society, vol. ix.

contribution to a full knowledge of that rising and flourishing member of our Union.

The various valuable publications of the Hon. W. Sullivan, the late W. Tudor, Esq., the Hon. Josiah, Quincy, Mayor of Boston, and now President of the University in its neighborhood; of the Hon. Judge Story, of Governor Everett, of Mr. J. E. Worcester, and of Jared Sparks, Esq., who is doing so much to illustrate the name of our Washington, as well as to embalm his own—reflect honor on the Society of which they are members, and aid in accomplishing its patriotic aims.

Similar remarks might be made in reference to several other works, as of Lincoln's History of Worcester, Lewis's of Lynn, Shattuck's of Concord, Felt's of Salem, Hamilton, Ipswich, and Essex, and the entertaining History of Boston, by the late Dr. Snow, whose blameless character is cherished by the Society, and whose early death they regret. To several objects also of this Society the amiable, accomplished, and lamented Buckminster devoted no small attention.*

But neither the occasion, nor the space allotted to this "Account" will allow enlargement, however gratifying it might be to the writer to indulge the recollection of departed associates and friends, or to dwell on the worth of those who happily survive. He will close this sketch with a catalogue of members of the Society, for which he acknowledges his obligations to the well known accuracy and attention of his respected friend, the Rev. Dr. Pierce.

Resident Members, in the order of their election.

Mr. Thomas Wallcutt,
Hon. John Davis, LL. D.
Rev. T. M. Harris, D. D.
Hon. Josiah Quincy, LL. D.
Rev. Jonathan Homer, D. D.
Hon. T. L. Winthrop, LL. D.
Hon. William Sullivan, LL. D.
Hon. John Quincy Adams, LL. D.
Rev. John Pierce, D. D.
Hon. Daniel Webster, LL. D.
Joseph Coolidge, Esq.
Joseph Tilden, Esq.
Hon. James Savage,
Hon. Charles Jackson, LL. D.
Rev. Charles Lowell, D. D.
Hon. Joseph Story, LL. D.
Hon. Leverett Saltonstall,
Ichabod Tucker, Esq.
Hon. Francis C. Gray,
Hon. Alexander H. Everett, LL. D.
Hon. John Pickering, LL. D.
Hon. Nahum Mitchell,
N. G. Snelling, Esq.
B. R. Nichols, Esq.
Hon. Nathan Hale,
Rev. Samuel Ripley,
His Exc. Edward Everett, LL. D.
Hon. J. C. Merrill,
Rev. William Jenks, D. D.
Hon. H. A. S. Dearborn,

* For little more than a year was he connected with it, yet he contemplated a work, "On the Sources of American History," which, had he lived to complete it, might have been of high worth.

Rev. Henry Ware, Jr., D. D.
Hon. John Lowell, LL. D.
Samuel P. Gardner, Esq.
Gamaliel Bradford, M. D.
Rev. F. W. P. Greenwood,
Rev. John G. Palfrey, D. D.
Jared Sparks, Esq.
Benjamin Merrill, Esq.
Joseph E. Worcester, M. A.
Joseph Willard, Esq.

Lemuel Shattuck, Esq.
Isaac P. Davis, Esq.
Mr. Alonzo Lewis,
Rev. Joseph B. Felt,
Hon. Lemuel Shaw, LL. D.
Hon. James T. Austin,
Rev. Convers Francis, D. D.
Hon. John Welles,
Rev. Charles W. Upham,
William Lincoln, Esq.

George Ticknor, Esq.
Rev. John Codman, D. D.
Mr. George Bancroft,
Hon. Nathan Appleton,
Hon. Rufus Choate,
Hon. John G. King,
Rev. Alexander Young,
Hon. Daniel A. White, LL. D.
William Gibbs, Esq.
Josiah Bartlett, M. D.

Corresponding Members.

Rev. Alexander Spark, Quebec, Can.
Noah Webster, LL. D. New Haven, Ct.
Hon. St. George Tucker, Williamsburg, Va.
Phineas Miller, Esq. Savannah, Ga.
James Clarke, Esq. Halifax, N. S.
Rev. Asa Norton, Paris, N. Y.
Hon. Stephen Van Rensselaer, LL. D. Albany, N. Y.
Ephraim Ramsay, Esq. Charleston, S. C.
Henry W. Desaussure, Esq. Charleston, S. C.
Lemuel Kollock, M. D. Savannah, Ga.
John Dunn, LL. D. Killaly, Irel.
Benjamin De Witt, M. D. Albany, N. Y.
Mr. Thomas Pieronnett, Demarara,
Rev. Thomas Hall, Leghorn,
Rev. Timothy Alden, Alleghany Co. Pa.
John Newman, M. D. Salisbury, N. C.
John Vaughan, Esq. Philadelphia, Pa.
William Barton, Esq. Lancaster, Pa.
William Johnson, New York.
Charles M. Wentworth, Esq. Halifax, N. S.
Robert Anderson, M. D. Edinburgh, Scot.
Hon. Samuel Eddy, LL. D. Rhode Island,
Benjamin Silliman, LL. D. New Haven, Ct.
His Exc. W. Plumer, Epping, N. H.
Jonathan Williams, Esq. Philadelphia, Pa.
Rt. Hon. Earl of Buchan, Edinburgh, Scot.
Rev. John Basset, Albany, N. Y.
Moses Fiske, Tennessee,
Hon. Timothy Pitkin, Farmington, Ct.
Rev. Eliph. Nott, D. D., LL. D. Schenectady, N. Y.
Hon. John C. Smith, LL. D. Sharon, Ct.
John Pintard, Esq. New York, N. Y.
John W. Francis, M. D. New York, N. Y.
Rev. James Richards, D. D. Auburn, N. Y.
Hon. Charles H. Atherton, Amherst, N. H.
George Chalmers, Esq. London, Eng.
Michael Joy, Esq. London, Eng.
Samuel Bayard, Esq. New Jersey,
Baron Alexander Von Humboldt, Paris, France,
Major Hugh McCall, Savannah, Ga.
William T. Williams, Esq.
Hon. Peter S. Duponceau, LL. D. Philadelphia, Pa.
Jonathan Goodhue, Esq. New York, N. Y.
Gulian C. Verplanck, LL. D. New York, N. Y.
Robert Walsh, LL. D. Philadelphia, Pa.
J. Van Ness Yates, Esq. Albany, N. Y.
Hon. Jeremiah Mason, LL. D. Boston,
John Farmer, Esq. Concord, N. H.
William Lee, Esq.
Hon. Frederick Adelung, Berlin, Prussia,
Adm. Sir Isaac Coffin, London, Eng.
Samuel Williams, Esq. London, Eng.
M. Julius de Wallenstein,
M. Barbé Marbois, Paris, France,
Gregorio Tunes,
Manuel Moreno,
His Exc. Don José Maria Salazar, Colombia,
Adam Winthrop, Esq. Louisiana,
Rev. John Hutchinson, England,
Hon. Theodorick Bland, Maryland,
Senor Manuel Lorenzo Vidaurre,
Hon. Albert Gallatin, LL. D. Pennsylvania,
Rev. Timothy Flint, Cincinnati, O.
Prof. C. C. Rafn, Copenhagen,
Chev. Pedersen, Minister from Denmark,
Thomas C. Haliburton, Esq. Nova Scotia,
Washington Irving, LL. D. New York city,
James Graham, England,
Rev. Henry Channing, New London, Ct.
Mr. John F. Watson, Philadelphia, Pa.
Mr. James H. Dean, Vermont,
Charles Fraser, Esq. Charleston, S. C.
Thomas Aspinwall, Esq. London, Eng.
Sir Francis Palgrave, London, Eng.
Hon. Lewis Cass, LL. D. Washington, D. C.
Rev. Jasper Adams, D. D. Charleston, S. C.
Hon. Roberts Vaux, Philadelphia, Pa.
Theodore Dwight, Esq. New York city,
Theodore Dwight, Jr. Esq. New York city,
James Mease, M. D. Philadelphia, Pa.
Hon. William Jay, Bedford, N. Y.
Ch. Just. Jona. Sewall, Quebec, Can.
Sir John Caldwell, Quebec, Can.
Sharon Turner, Esq. Eng.
Francis B. Winthrop, Esq. New Haven, Ct.
Duc de Montmorenci, Paris, France,
M. César Moreau, Paris, France,
J. Smyth Rogers, Hartford, Ct.
Erastus Smith, Esq. New Haven, Ct.
William Schlegel, Copenhagen,
Finn Magnusson, Copenhagen,
Col. Juan Galindo, Copenhagen,
Judge Henry A. Bullard, Louisiana,
Hon. Richard Biddle, Pittsburgh, Pa.
J. K. Paulding, Esq. New York city,
Hon. Henry Clay, LL. D. Lexington, Ky.
Rev. W. Allen, D. D. Pres. Bowdoin College,
Hon. Levi Woodbury, LL. D. Washington, D. C.
Rev. Benjamin Tappan, D. D. Augusta, Me.
J. Francis Fisher, Esq. Philadelphia, Pa.
T. A. Moerenbout, Tahiti, Soc. Isl.
Usher Parsons, M. D. Providence, R. I.
W. D. Williamson, Esq. Bangor, Me.
George Folsom, Esq. New York City,
Peter G. Stuyvesant, Esq. New York city,
Rev. Luther Halsey, D. D. Auburn, N. Y.

"A WORD TO BOSTON,"

BY GOVERNOR WILLIAM BRADFORD.

[In the IIId volume of the *Collections*, first series, was published "a descriptive and Historical account of New England, in verse," by Gov. Bradford, of which Dr. Belknap remarks, "if it be not graced with the charms of poetry, yet it is a just and affecting narrative, intermixed with pious and useful reflections." Of a like strain are the lines that follow, and as, from the reference to them in the Governor's Will, of which we subjoin an extract, they were by him commended to preservation, we rescue them from the original manuscript where for more than one hundred and sixty years they have remained in obscurity.

"I commend unto your wisdom and discretion, some small bookes written by my own hand, to be improved as you shall see meet. In special I commend to you a little booke with a blacke cover, wherein there is a word to Plymouth, a word to Boston, and a word to New England; with sundry useful verses." [The Will was witnessed by Thomas Cushman, Thomas Southworth, and Nathaniel Morton.]

Of Boston in New England.

O Boston, though thou now art grown
To be a great and wealthy town,
Yet I have seen thee a void place,
Shrubs and bushes covering thy face;
And house then in thee none were there,
Nor such as gold and silk did weare;
No drunkenness were then in thee,
Nor such excesse as now we see.
We then drunke freely of thy spring
Without paying of any thing;
We lodged freely where we would,
All things were free and nothing sold.
And they that did thee first begin
Had hearts as free and as willing
Their poor friends for to entertaine,
And never looked at sordid gaine.
Some thou hast had whome I did know,
That spent theirselves to make thee grow,
And thy foundations they did lay
Which doe remaine unto this day.
When thou wast weak they did thee nurse,
Or else with thee it had been worse;
They left thee not, but did defend
And succour thee unto their end.
Thou now hast growne in wealth and store,
Doe not forget that thou wast poore,

And lift not up thyselfe in pride,
From truth and justice turne not aside.
Remember thou a Cotton had,
Which made the hearts of many glad;
What he thee taught bear thou in minde,
It's hard another such to finde.
A Winthrop once in thee was knowne
Who unto thee was as a crowne.
Such ornaments are very rare
Yet thou enjoyed this blessed pair.
But these are gone, their work is done,
Their day is past, set is their sun:
Yet faithful Wilson still remains,
And learned Norton doth take pains.
Live ye in peace. I could say more.
Oppress ye not the weake and poore.
The trade is all in your own hand,
Take heed ye doe not wrong the land,
Lest he that hath lift you on high,
When, as the poore to him doe cry
Doe throw you downe from your high state,
And make you low and desolate.

A word to New England.

O New England, thou canst not boast;
Thy former glory thou hast lost.
When Hooker, Winthrop, Cotton died,
And many precious ones beside,
Thy beauty then it did decay,
And still doth languish more away;
Love, truth, good-men, mercy and grace,
And wealth and the world take their place.
Thy open sins none can them hide,
Fraud, drunkenness, whoredom and pride.
The great oppressors slay the poore,
But whimsie errors they kill more.
Yet some thou hast who mourne and weep,
And their garments they unspotted keep;
Who seek God's honour to maintaine
That true Religion may remaine.
These doe invite and sweetly call
Each to other, and say to all,
Repent, amend, and turn to God
That we may prevent his sharp rod,
Time yet thou hast, improve it well,
That God's presence may with you dwell.

OUR FOREFATHER'S SONG.

[Composed about the year 1630, author unknown; *taken memoriter, in* 1785, *from the lips of an old Lady, at the advanced period of* 96. *There is visibly a break in the sense, commencing at the* 5*th line of the* 5*th verse:* and, through the failure of memory, four lines have been lost at the latter part of the 5th stanza.]

New England's annoyances you that would know them,
Pray ponder these verses which briefly doth shew them.

I.

The place where we live is a wilderness wood,
Where grass is much wanting that's fruitful and good:
Our mountains and hills and our valleys below,
Being commonly covered with ice and with snow:
And when the northwest wind with violence blows,
Then every man pulls his cap over his nose:
But if any's so hardy and will it withstand,
He forfeits a finger, a foot, or a hand.

II.

But when the spring opens we then take the hoe,
And make the ground ready to plant and to sow;
Our corn being planted and seed being sown,
The worms destroy much before it is grown;
And when it is growing some spoil there is made,
By birds and by squirrels that pluck up the blade;
And when it is come to full corn in the ear,
It is often destroyed by raccoon and by deer.

III.

And now our garments begin to grow thin,
And wool is much wanted to card and to spin;
If we can get a garment to cover without,
Our other in garments are * clout upon clout;
Our clothes we brought with us are apt to be torn,
They need to be clouted soon after they're worn,
But clouting our garments they hinder us nothing,
Clouts double, are warmer than single whole clothing.

IV.

If fresh meat be wanting, to fill up our dish,
We have carrots and turnips as much as we wish;
And is there a mind for a delicate dish
We repair to the clam banks, and *there* we catch fish.

* Clout signifies patching.

Instead of pottage and puddings and custards and pies,
Our pumpkins and parsnips are common supplies;
We have pumpkins at morning and pumpkins at noon;
If it was not for pumpkins we should be undone.

V.

If barley be wanting to make into malt,
We must be contented and think it no fault;
For we can make liquor to sweeten our lips,
Of pumpkins and parsnips and walnut tree chips.

* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *

VI.

Now while some are going let others be coming,
For while liquor's boiling it must have a scumming;
But I will not blame them, for birds of a feather,
By seeking their fellows are flocking together.
But you whom the Lord intends hither to bring,
Forsake not the honey for fear of the sting;
But bring both a quiet and contented mind,
And all needful blesssings you surely will find

MODEL OF CHRISTIAN CHARITY.

BY JOHN WINTHROP ESQ.

FIRST GOVERNOR OF THE COLONY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY.

[We introduce this interesting Paper by the following letter to the Corr. Sec. of Mass. Hist. Society.]

Dear Sir,

Agreeably to your request, I forward to you a copy of the Winthrop ms. belonging to the New York Historical Society, as transcribed by the Assistant Librarian, under the direction of the Society, in accordance with a resolution I had the honor to submit at a late meeting. A member of your Publishing Committee, whom I had informed of the existence of this document, communicated to me the desire of the Committee to have it inserted in their forthcoming volume of Collections, and as it is the production of a man whose fame is inseparably connected with the history of Massachusetts, there seemed to be a manifest propriety in acceding to the request. The Society, therefore, readily consented that it should be communicated to the public, through that medium.

I am satisfied, by comparing it with the original, that the copy has been accurately made; occasionally, however, a word was illegible, rendering it necessary to leave blanks. The ms. is evidently in the obscure handwriting prevalent at the period to which it is referred, though probably not in that of the author. It is supposed to have been presented to the Society by the late Francis B. Winthrop, Esq., of this city, (the oldest brother of the Hon. Thomas L. Winthrop, late Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts,) a lineal descendant of the author, into whose possession I am informed most of the old family papers came, nearly all of which have since perished. Among these was an original letter from Charles II. to Governor Winthrop of Connecticut, which was in existence a few years ago in this city.

Although aided in my inquiries by B. R. Winthrop, Esq., Recording Secretary of this Society, and of the same family, (who, by the way, is also, on his mother's side, a lineal descendant from Governor Stuyvesant, of the Rival Colony of New Netherlands, afterwards New York.) I regret to be unable to furnish any additional information relative to this interesting relic of the "brave leader and famous Governor" of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.

Very Respectfully,
Your faithful
and obedient Servant,
George Folsom.

New York, *April* 19, 1838.

Prefatory Remarks by a Member of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

It is not easy for any of us, in modern times, to form a perfect estimate of that devotion to the general good, which characterised the fathers of New England. Some glorious, though inadequate, ideas are excited, indeed, in a generous breast, when the story is first heard of the noble company of pilgrims, who, having lived seven years exiles from their native land, among the Hollanders, but not of them, came in midwinter to the desolate coast of Plymouth, to bury half their number in three months. Well might a colony of half a hundred souls, including women and children, be compacted together by common principles, as by common perils; and we can readily believe, that, in all their acts, they should make reference to the will of the Most High, from whom alone their hourly preservation was expected.

But that politic and accomplished gentlemen, well supplied with means of present enjoyment, and entitled to expect future advancement at home, should have been exalted to a spirit of stern patriotism and equal self denial in founding deeply and broadly the edifice of SUCH an empire, whose whole and true glory was all within their prophetic vision, is a marvel which students of romance alone had ever contemplated. *Tantum religio potuit.*

Readers of the following homily of Governor Winthrop must, however, naturally have anticipated the success of the Massachusetts settlement, if his principes of action were diffused among his companions, and taught to their descendants. The name of that man is always sure to bring up to remembrance the virtues of our fathers, which will never find a better representative. That he practised what in this essay is inculcated, the record of his life for nineteen years fully discloses; and the failure of others to fill out the whole character, when they yielded to temptation in returning to their native land, or in emigrating to happier fields and more benignant skies, grieved him, like the ingratitude of a child to his parent. His reflections on the subject, after twelve years of service in the cause, make one of the most striking passages of his History, II. 87, and may appropriately be here introduced:

"For such as come together into a wilderness, where are nothing but wild beasts and beastlike men, and there confederate together in civil and church estate, whereby they do, implicitly at least, bind themselves to support each other, and all of them that Society, whether civil or sacred, whereof they are members,—how they can break from this without free consent, is hard to find, so as may satisfy a tender or good conscience in time of trial. Ask thy conscience, if thou wouldst have plucked up thy stakes, and brought thy family three thousand miles, if thou hadst expected that all, or most, would have forsaken thee there. Ask again, what liberty thou hast towards others, which thou likest not to allow others towards thyself; for if one may go, another may, and so the greater part, and so church and commonwealth may be left destitute in a wilderness, exposed to misery and reproach, and all for thy ease and pleasure; whereas these all, being now thy brethren, as near to thee as the Israelites were to Moses, it were much safer for thee, after his example, to choose rather to suffer affliction with thy brethren, than to enlarge thy ease and pleasure by furthering the occasion of their ruin." *Σ.*

A

MODELL OF CHRISTIAN CHARITY.

WRITTEN

ON BOARD THE ARBELLA, ON THE ATLANTIC OCEAN.

By the Hon. John Winthrop Esqr. In his passage (with a great company of Religious people, of which Christian tribes he was the Brave Leader and famous Governor;) from the Island of Great Brittaine to New-England in the North America. Anno 1630.

CHRISTIAN CHARITIE.

A Modell hereof.

God Almighty in his most holy and wise providence, hath soe disposed of the condition of mankind, as in all times some must be rich, some poore, some high and eminent in power and dignitie; others mean and in submission.

The Reason hereof.

1 *Reas.* First to hold conformity with the rest of his world, being delighted to show forth the glory of his wisdom in the variety and difference of the creatures, and the glory of his power in ordering all these differences for the preservation and good of the whole; and the glory of his greatness, that as it is the glory of princes to have many officers, soe this great king will haue many stewards, counting himself more honoured in dispensing his gifts to man by man, than if he did it by his owne immediate hands.

2 *Reas.* Secondly that he might haue the more occasion to manifest the work of his Spirit: first upon the wicked in

moderating and restraining them: soe that the riche and mighty should not eate upp the poore nor the poore and dispised rise upp against and shake off theire yoake. 2ly In the regenerate, in exerciseing his graces in them, as in the grate ones, theire love, mercy, gentleness, temperance &c., in the poore and inferior sorte, theire faithe, patience, obedience &c.

3 *Reas.* Thirdly, that every man might have need of others, and from hence they might be all knitt more nearly together in the Bonds of brotherly affection. From hence it appears plainly that noe man is made more honourable than another or more wealthy &c., out of any particular and singular respect to himselfe, but for the glory of his creator and the common good of the creature, man. Therefore God still reserves the propperty of these gifts to himself as Ezek. 16. 17. he there calls wealthe, *his gold and his silver*, and Prov. 3. 9. he claims theire service as his due, *honor the Lord with thy riches* &c.—All men being thus (by divine providence) ranked into two sorts, riche and poore; under the first are comprehended all such as are able to live comfortably by their own meanes duely improved; and all others are poore according to the former distribution. There are two rules whereby we are to walk one towards another: Justice and Mercy. These are always distinguished in their act and in their object, yet may they both concurre in the same subject in eache respect; as sometimes there may be an occasion of showing mercy to a rich man in some sudden danger or distresse, and alsoe doeing of meere justice to a poor man in regard of some perticular contract &c. There is likewise a double Lawe by which wee are regulated in our conversation towardes another; in both the former respects, the lawe of nature and the lawe of grace, or the morrall lawe or the lawe of the gospell, to omitt the rule of justice as not propperly belonging to this purpose otherwise than it may fall into consideration in some perticular cases. By the first of these lawes man as he was enabled soe withall is commanded to love his neighbour as himself. Upon this ground stands all the precepts of the morrall lawe, which concernes our dealings with men. To apply this to the works of mercy; this lawe requires two things. First that every man afford his help to another in every

want or distresse. Secondly, that hee performe this out of the same affection which makes him carefull of his owne goods, according to that of our Savior, (Math.) *Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you.* This was practised by Abraham and Lot in entertaining the angells and the old man of Gibea. The lawe of Grace or of the Gospell hath some difference from the former; as in these respects, First the lawe of nature was given to man in the estate of innocency; this of the Gospell in the estate of regeneracy. 2ly, the former propounds one man to another, as the same flesh and image of God; this as a brother in Christ allsoe, and in the communion of the same Spirit, and soe teacheth to put a difference between christians and others. *Doe good to all, especially to the household of faith;* upon this ground the Israelites were to putt a difference betweene the brethren of such as were strangers though not of the Canaanites.

3ly. The Lawe of nature would give no rules for dealing with enemies, for all are to be considered as friends in the state of innocency, but the Gospell commands loue to an enemy. Proofe. *If thine Enemy hunger, feed him; Loue your Enemies, doe good to them that hate you.* Math. 5. 44.

This lawe of the Gospell propounds likewise a difference of seasons and occasions. There is a time when a christian must sell all and give to the poor, as they did in the Apostles times. There is a time allsoe when christians (though they give not all yet) must give beyond their abillity, as they of Macedonia, Cor. 2, 6. Likewise community of perills calls for extraordinary liberality, and soe doth community in some speciall service for the churche. Lastly, when there is no other means whereby our christian brother may be relieved in his distress, we must help him beyond our ability rather than tempt God in putting him upon help by miraculous or extraordinary meanes.

This duty of mercy is exercised in the kinds, Giueving, lending and forgiving.—

Quest. What rule shall a man observe in giueving in respect of the measure?

Ans. If the time and occasion be ordinary he is to giue out of his abundance. *Let him lay aside as God hath blessed him.* If the time and occasion be extraordinary,

1169686

he must be ruled by them ; taking this withall, that then a man cannot likely doe too much, especially if he may leave himselfe and his family under probable means of comfortable subsistence.

Object. A man must lay upp for posterity, the fathers lay upp for posterity and children, and *he is worse than an infidell that pronideth not for his owne.*

Ans. For the first, it is plaine that it being spoken by way of comparison, it must be meant of the ordinary and usuall course of fathers, and cannot extend to times and occasions extraordinary. For the other place the Apostle speaks against such as walked inordinately, and it is without question, that he is worse than an infidell who through his owne sloathe and voluptuousness shall neglect to provide for his family.—

Object. The wise man's Eies are in his head, saith Solomon, *and foreseeth the plague ;* therefore he must forecast and lay upp against evill times when hee or his may stand in need of all he can gather.

Ans. This very Argument Solomon useth to persuade to liberallity, Eccle.: *Cast thy bread upon the waters,* and *for thou knowest not what evill may come upon the land.* Luke 26. *Make you friends of the riches of iniquity ;* you will ask how this shall be ? very well. For first he that giues to the poore, lends to the lord and he will repay him even in this life an hundredfold to him or his.—*The righteous is ever mercifull and lendeth and his seed enjoyeth the blessing ;* and besides wee know what advantage it will be to us in the day of account when many such witnesses shall stand forth for us to witnesse the improvement of our tallent. And I would know of those whoe pleade soe much for laying up for time to come, whether they holde that to be Gospell, Math. 16. 19. *Lay not upp for yourselves Treasures upon Earth &c.* If they acknowledge it, what extent will they allowe it ? if only to those primitive times, let them consider the reason whereopon our Saviour groundes it. The first is that they are subject to the moathe, the rust, the theife. Secondly, They will steale away the hearte ; *where the treasure is there will ye heart be allsoe.* The reasons are of like force at all times. Therefore the exhortation must be generall and perpetuall, withallwayes in respect of the love and affection

to riches and in regard of the things themselves when any speciall seruice for the churche or perticular Distresse of our brother doe call for the use of them ; otherwise it is not only lawfull but necessary to lay upp as Joseph did to haue ready uppon such occasions, as the Lord (whose stewards wee are of them) shall call for them from us ; Christ giues us an Instance of the first, when hee sent his disciples for the Ass, and bidds them answer the owner thus, the Lord hath need of him : soe when the Tabernacle was to be built, he sends to his people to call for their silver and gold, &c ; and yeildes noe other reason but that it was for his worke. When Elisha comes to the widow of Sareptah and findes her preparing to make ready her pittance for herselfe and family, he bids her first provide for him, he challengeth first God's parte which she must first give before shee must serve her owne family. All these teache us that the Lord lookes that when hee is pleased to call for his right in any thing wee haue, our owne interest wee haue, must stand aside till his turne be served. For the other, wee need looke noe further then to that of John 1. *he whoe hath this world's goodes and seeth his brother to neede and shutts upp his compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him*, which comes punctually to this conclusion ; if thy brother be in want and thou canst help him, thou needst not make doubt, what thou shouldst doe ; if thou louest God thou must help him.

Quest. What rule must wee observe in lending ?

Ans. Thou must observe whether thy brother hath present or probable or possible means of repaying thee, if there be none of those, thou must give him according to his necessity, rather then lend him as he requires ; if he hath present means of repaying thee, thou art to look at him not as an act of mercy, but by way of Commerce, wherein thou arte to walk by the rule of justice ; but if his means of repaying thee be only probable or possible, then is hee an object of thy mercy, thou must lend him, though there be danger of losing it, Deut. 15. 7. *If any of thy brethren be poore* &c., *thou shalt lend him sufficient.* That men might not shift off this duty by the apparent hazzard, he tells them that though the yeare of Jubile were at hand (when he must remitt it, if hee were not able to

repay it before) yet he must lend him and that chearefully. *It may not greive thee to giue him* (saith hee) and because some might object, why soe I should soone impoverishe myself and my family, he adds with all thy worke &c ; for our Saviour, Math. 5. 42. *From him that would borrow of thee turne not away.*

Quest. What rule must we observe in forgiuing ?

Ans. Whether thou didst lend by way of commerce or in mercy, if he hath nothing to pay thee, must forgive, (except in cause where thou hast a surety or a lawfull pleadge) Deut. 15. 2. Every seaventh yeare the Creditor was to quitt that which he lent to his brother if he were poore as appears ver. 8. *Save when there shall be no poore with thee.* In all these and like cases, Christ was a generall rule, Math. 7. 22. *Whatsoever ye would that men should doe to you, doe yee the same to them allsoe.*

Quest. What rule must wee observe and walke by in cause of community of perill ?

Ans. The same as before, but with more enlargement towards others and lesse respect towards ourselves and our owne right. Hence it was that in the primitive Churche they sold all, had all things in common, neither did any man say that which he possessed was his owne. Likewise in theire returne out of the captivity, because the worke was greate for the restoring of the church and the danger of enemies was common to all, Nehemiah directs the Jews to liberallity and readiness in remitting theire debts to theire brethren, and disposing liberally to such as wanted, and stand not upon their owne dues which they might have demanded of them. Thus did some of our Forefathers in times of persecution in England, and soe did many of the faithful of other churches, whereof wee keepe an honorable remembrance of them ; and it is to be observed that both in Scriptures and latter stories of the churches that such as have beene most bountifull to the poore saintes, especially in those extraordinary times and occasions, God hath left them highly commended to posterity, as Zacheus, Cornelius, Dorcas, Bishop Hooper, the Cuttler of Brussells and divers others. Observe againe that the Scripture gives noe caussion to restraine any from being over liberall this way ; but all men to the liberall and cherefull practise hereof by the sweeter promises ; as

to instance one for many, Isaiah 58. 6. *Is not this the fast I have chosen to loose the bonds of wickedness, to take off the heavy burdens, to lett the oppressed go free and to breake every yoake, to deale thy bread to the hungry and to bring the poore that wander into thy house, when thou seest the naked to cover them; and then shall thy light brake forth as the morning and thy healthe shall growe speedily, thy righteousness shall goe before God, and the glory of the Lord shall embrace thee; then thou shalt call and the Lord shall answer thee* &c., Ch. 2. 10. *If thou power out thy soule to the hungry, then shall thy light spring out in darkness, and the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfie thy soule in draught, and make falt thy bones, thou shalt be like a watered garden, and they shalt be of thee that shall build the old wast places* &c. On the contrary most heavy cursses are layed upon such as are straightened towards the Lord and his people, Judg. 5. *Cursse the Meroshe because he came not to help the Lord. Hee whoe shutteth his eares from hearing the cry of the poore, he shall cry and shall not be heard;* Math. 25. *Goe ye curssed into everlasting fire &c.* I *was hungry and ye fedd mee not,* Cor. 2. 9. 16. He that soweth sparingly shall reape sparingly. Haveing already sett forth the practice of mercy according to the rule of God's lawe, it will be useful to lay open the groundes of it allsoe, being the other parte of the Commandment and that is the affection from which this exercise of mercy must arise, the Apostle tells us that this *love is the fullfilling of the lawe,* not that it is enough to loue our brother and soe noe further; but in regard of the excellency of his partes giueing any motion to the other as the soule to the body and the power it hath to sett all the faculties on worke in the outward exercise of this duty; as when wee bid one make the clocke strike, he doth not lay hand on the hammer, which is the immediate instrument of the sound, but setts on worke the first mouer or maine wheele; knoweing that will certainely produce the sound which he intends. Soe the way to drawe men to the workes of mercy, is not by force of Argument from the goodness or necessity of the worke; for though this cause may enforce, a rationall minde to some present act of mercy, as is frequent in experience, yet it cannot worke such a habit in

a soule, as shall make it prompt upon all occasions to produce the same effect, but by frameing these affections of loue in the hearte which will as naturally bring forthe the other, as any cause doth produce the effect.

The deffinition which the Scripture giues us of loue is this. *Love is the bond of perfection,* first it is a bond or ligament. 2ly it makes the worke perfect. There is noe body but consists of partes and that which knitts these partes together, giues the body its perfection, because it makes eache parte soe contiguous to others as thereby they doe mutually participate with each other, both in strengthe and infirmity, in pleasure and paine. To instance in the most perfect of all bodies; Christ and his Church make one body; the severall partes of this body considered a parte before they were united, were as disproportionate and as much disordering as soe many contrary quallities or elements, but when Christ comes, and by his spirit and loue knitts all these partes to himselfe and each to other, it is become the most perfect and best proportioned body in the world, Eph. 4. 16. *Christ, by whome all the body being knitt together by every joint for the furniture thereof, according to the effectuall power which is in the measure of every perfection of partes, a glorious body without spott or wrinkle;* the ligaments hereof being Christ, or his love, for Christ is love, 1 John 4. 8. Soe this definition is right. *Love is the bond of perfection.*

From hence we may frame these conclusions. 1. First of all, true Christians are of one body in Christ, 1 Cor. 12. 12. 13. 17. *Ye are the body of Christ and members of their parte.* All the partes of this body being thus vnited are made soe contiguous in a speciall relation as they must needes partake of each other's strength and infirmity; joy and sorrowe, weale and woe. 1 Cor. 12. 26. *If one member suffers, all suffer with it, if one be in honor, all rejoyce with it.* 2ly. The ligaments of this body which knitt together are loue. 3ly. Noe body can be perfect which wants its proper ligament. 5ly. This sensibleness and sympathy of each other's conditions will necessarily infuse into each parte a native desire and endeavour, to strengthen, defend, preserve and comfort the other. To insist a little on this conclusion being the product of all the former, the truthe hereof will appeare both by precept

and patterne. 1 John 3. 10. *Yee ought to lay doune your lives for the brethren.* Gal. 6. 2. *beare ye one another's burthen's and soe fulfill the lawe of Christ.* For patterns wee haue that first of our Saviour whoe out of his good will in obedience to his father, becomeing a parte of this body and being knitt with it in the bond of loue, found such a natiue sensibleness of our infirmities and sorrowes as he willingly yielded himselfe to deathe to ease the infirmities of the rest of his body, and soe healed theire sorrowes. From the like sympathy of partes did the Apostles and many thousands of the Saintes lay doune theire lives for Christ. Againe the like wee may see in the members of this body among themselves. 1 Rom. 9. Paule could have been contented to have been separated from Christ, that the Jewes might not be cutt off from the body. It is very observable what hee professeth of his affectionate partaking with every member ; *whoe is weake* (saith hee) *and I am not weake ? whoe is offended and I burne not ;* and againe, 2 Cor. 7. 13. *therefore wee are comforted because yee were comforted.* Of Epaphroditus he speaketh, Phil. 2. 30. *that he regarded not his owne life to do him service.* Soe Phebe and others are called *the servants of the churche.* Now it is apparent that they served not for wages, or by constrainte, but out of loue. The like we shall finde in the histories of the churche in all ages ; the sweete sympathie of affections which was in the members of this body one towards another ; theire chearfullness in serueing and suffering together ; how liberall they were without repineing, harbourers without grudgeing, and helpfull without reproaching; and all from hence, because they had feruent loue amongst them ; which onely makes the practise of mercy constant and easie.

The next consideration is how this loue comes to be wrought. Adam in his first estate was a perfect modell of mankinde in all their generations, and in him this loue was perfected in regard of the habit. But Adam, rent himselfe from his Creator, rent all his posterity allsoe one from another ; whence it comes that every man is borne with this principle in him to loue and seeke himselfe onely, and thus a man continueth till Christ comes and takes possession of the soule and infuseth another principle, loue to God and our brother, and this latter haueing continuall

supply from Christ, as the head and roote by which he is vnited, gets the predomining in the soule, soe by little and little expells the former. 1 John 4. 7. *loue cometh of God and every one that loueth is borne of God*, soe that this loue is the fruite of the new birthe, and none can have it but the new creature. Now when this quallity is thus formed in the soules of men, it workes like the Spirit upon the drie bones. Ezek. 39. *bone came to bone.* It gathers together the scattered bones, or perfect old man Adam, and knitts them into one body againe in Christ, whereby a man is become againe a living soule.

The third consideration is concerning the exercise of this loue, which is twofold, inward or outward. The outward hath beene handled in the former preface of this discourse. From unfolding the other wee must take in our way that maxime of philosophy. *Simile simili gaudet*, or like will to like ; for as of things which are turned with disaffection to eache other, the ground of it is from a dissimilitude or ariseing from the contrary or different nature of the things themselves ; for the ground of loue is an apprehension of some resemblance in the things loued to that which affects it. This is the cause why the Lord loues the creature, soe farre as it hathe any of his Image in it ; he loues his elect because they are like himselfe, he beholds them in his beloued sonne. So a mother loues her childe, because shee throughly conceives a resemblance of herselfe in it. Thus it is betweene the members of Christ; eache discernes, by the worke of the Spirit, his oune Image and resemblance in another, and therefore cannot but loue him as he loues himself. Now when the soule, which is of a sociable nature, findes anything like to itselfe, it is like Adam when Eve was brought to him. She must be one with himselfe. *This is flesh of my flesh* (saith he) *and bone of my bone.* Soe the soule conceives a greate delighte in it ; therefore shee desires nearness and familiarity with it. Shee hath a greate propensity to doe it good and receiues such content in it, as fearing the miscarriage of her beloved, shee bestowes it in the inmost closett of her heart. Shee will not endure that it shall want any good which shee can giue it. If by occasion shee be withdrawne from the company of it, shee is still looking towardes the place where shee left her beloved. If shee heard it groane, shee

is with it presently. If shee finde it sadd and disconsolate, shee sighes and moanes with it. Shee hath noe such joy as to see her beloved merry and thriving. If shee see it wronged, shee cannot hear it without passion. Shee setts noe boundes to her affections, nor hath any thought of reward. Shee findes recompense enough in the exercise of her loue towardes it. Wee may see this acted to life in Jonathan and David. Jonathan a valiant man endued with the spirit of love, soe soone as he discovered the same spirit in David had presently his hearte knitt to him by this ligament of loue ; soe that it is said he loued him as his owne soule, he takes soe great pleasure in him, that hee stripps himselfe to adorne his beloved. His father's kingdome was not soe precious to him as his beloved David, David shall haue it with all his hearte. Himself desires noe more but that hee may be neare to him to rejoyce in his good. Hee chooseth to converse with him in the wildernesse even to the hazzard of his oune life, rather than with the greate Courtiers in his father's Pallace. When hee sees danger towards him, hee spares neither rare paines nor perill to direct it. When injury was offered his beloued David, hee would not beare it, though from his oune father. And when they must parte for a season onely, they thought theire heartes would have broake for sorrowe, had not theire affections found vent by abundance of teares. Other instances might be brought to showe the nature of this affection ; as of Ruthe and Naomi, and many others ; but this truthe is cleared enough. If any shall object that it is not possible that loue shall be bred or upheld without hope of requitall, it is graunted ; but that is not our cause ; for this loue is alluayes vnder reward. It never giues, but it alluayes receives with advantage ; First in regard that among the members of the same body, loue and affection are reciprocall in a most equall and sweete kinde of commerce.

2nly. In regard of the pleasure and content that the exercise of loue carries with it, as wee may see in the naturall body. The mouth is at all the paines to receive and mince the foode which serves for the nourishment of all the other partes of the body ; yet it hath noe cause to complaine ; for first the other partes send backe, by severall passages, a due proportion of the same nourishment, in a better forme

for the strengthening and comforting the mouthe. 2ly the laboure of the mouthe is accompanied with such pleasure and content as farre exceedes the paines it takes. Soe is it in all the labour of love among Christians. The partie louing, reapes loue again, as was showed before, which the soule covetts more then all the wealthe in the world. 3ly. Nothing yeildes more pleasure and content to the soule then when it findes that which it may loue fervently; for to love and live beloved is the soule's paradise both here and in heaven. In the State of wedlock there be many comforts to learne out of the troubles of that Condition; but let such as have tryed the most, say if there be any sweetness in that Condition comparable to the exercise of mutuall loue.

From the former Considerations arise these Conclusions.—1. First, This loue among Christians is a reall thing, not imaginarie. 2ly. This loue is as absolutely necessary to the being of the body of Christ, as the sinews and other ligaments of a naturall body are to the being of that body. 3ly. This loue is a divine, spirituall, nature; free, active, strong, couragious, permanent; undervaluing all things beneathe its propper object and of all the graces, this makes us nearer to resemble the virtues of our heavenly father. 4thly It rests in the loue and wellfare of its beloued. For the full certain knowledge of those truthes concerning the nature, use, and excellency of this grace, that which the holy ghost hath left recorded, 1 Cor. 13, may give full satisfaction, which is needful for every true member of this louely body of the Lord Jesus, to worke upon theire heartes by prayer, meditation continuall exercise at least of the speciall [influence] of this grace, till Christ be formed in them and they in him, all in eache other, knitt together by this bond of loue.

It rests now to make some application of this discourse, by the present designe, which gaue the occasion of writing of it. Herein are 4 things to be propounded; *first* the persons, 2ly the worke, 3ly the end, 4thly the meanes. 1. For *the persons*. Wee are a company professing ourselves fellow members of Christ, in which respect onely though wee were absent from each other many miles, and had our imployments as farre distant, yet wee ought to account ourselves knitt together by this bond of loue, and,

live in the exercise of it, if wee would have comforte of our being in Christ. This was notorious in the practise of the Christians in former times; as is testified of the Waldenses, from the mouth of one of the adversaries *Æneas Sylvius* "mutuo ament pere antequam norunt," they use to loue any of theire owne religion even before they were acquainted with them. 2nly for the *worke* wee have in hand. It is by a mutuall consent, through a speciall over-valuing providence and a more than an ordinary approbation of the Churches of Christ, to seeke out a place of cohabitation and Consorteshipp under a due forme of Government both ciuill and ecclesiasticall. In such cases as this, the care of the publique must oversway all private respects, by which, not only conscience, but meare civill pollicy, dothe binde us. For it is a true rule that particular Estates cannot subsist in the ruin of the publique. 3ly The *end* is to improve our lives to doe more service to the Lord; the comforte and encrease of the body of Christe, whereof we are members; that ourselves and posterity may be the better preserved from the common corruptions of this evill world, to serve the Lord and worke out our Salvation under the power and purity of his holy ordinances. 4thly for the *meanes* whereby this must be effected. They are twofold, a conformity with the worke and end wee aime at. These wee see are extraordinary, therefore wee must not content ourselves with usuall ordinary meanes. Whatsoever wee did, or ought to have done, when wee liued in England, the same must wee doe, and more allsoe, where wee goe. That which the most in theire churches mainetaine as truthe in profession onely, wee must bring into familiar and constant practise; as in this duty of loue, wee must loue brotherly without dissimulation, wee must loue one another with a pure hearte fervently. Wee must beare one anothers burthens. We must not looke onely on our owne things, but allsoe on the things of our brethren. Neither must wee thinke that the Lord will beare with such faileings at our hands as he dothe from those among whome wee have lived; and that for these 3 Reasons; 1. In regard of the more neare bond of mariage between him and us, wherein hee hath taken us to be his, after a most

strickt and peculiar manner, which will make them the more jealous of our loue and obedience. Soe he tells the people of Israell, *you onely have I knowne of all the families of the Earthe, therefore will I punishe you for your Transgressions.* 2ly, because *the Lord will be sanctified in them that come neare him.* We know that there were many that corrupted the service of the Lord ; some setting upp altars before his owne ; others offering both strange fire and strange sacrifices allsoe ; yet there came noe fire from heaven, or other sudden judgement upon them, as did upon Nadab and Abihu, whoe yet wee may think did not sinne presumptuously. 3ly When God gives a speciall commission he lookes to have it strictly observed in every article, When he gave Saule a commission to destroy Amaleck, Hee indented with him upon certain articles, and because hee failed in one of the least, and that upon a faire pretense, it lost him the kingdom, which should have beene his reward, if hee had observed his commission. Thus stands the cause betweene God and us. We are entered into Covenant with Him for this worke. Wee haue taken out a commission. The Lord hath given us leave to drawe our own articles. Wee haue professed to enterprise these and those accounts, upon these and those ends. Wee have hereupon besought Him of favour and blessing. Now if the Lord shall please to heare us, and bring us in peace to the place we desire, then hath hee ratified this covenant and sealed our Commission, and will expect a strict performance of the articles contained in it ; but if wee shall neglect the observation of these articles which are the ends wee have propounded, and, dissembling with our God, shall fall to embrace this present world and prosecute our carnall intentions, seeking greate things for ourselves and our posterity, the Lord will surely breake out in wrathe against us ; be revenged of such a [sinful] people and make us knowe the price of the breache of such a covenant.

Now the onely way to avoyde this shipwracke, and to provide for our posterity, is to followe the counsell of Micah, *to doe justly, to love mercy, to walk humbly with our God.* For this end, wee must be knitt together, in this worke, as one man. Wee must entertaine each other in brotherly

affection. Wee must be willing to abridge ourselves of our superfluities, for the supply of other's necessities. Wee must uphold a familiar commerce together in all meekeness, gentlenes, patience and liberality. Wee must delight in eache other ; make other's conditions our oune ; rejoice together, mourne together, labour and suffer together, allwayes haueving before our eyes our commission and community in the worke, as members of the same body. Soe shall wee *keepe the unitie of the spirit in the bond of peace.* The Lord will be our God, and delight to dwell among us, as his oune people, and will command a blessing upon us in all our wayes. Soe that wee shall see much more of his wisdome, power, goodness and truthe, than formerly wee haue been acquainted with. Wee shall finde that the God of Israell is among us, when ten of us shall be able to resist a thousand of our enemies ; when hee shall make us a prayse and glory that men shall say of succeeding plantations, "the Lord make it likely that of *New England.*" For wee must consider that wee shall be as a citty upon a hill. The eies of all people are uppon us. Soe that if wee shall deale falsely with our God in this worke wee haue undertaken, and soe cause him to withdrawe his present help from us, wee shall be made a story and a by-word through the world. Wee shall open the mouthes of enemies to speake evill of the wayes of God, and all professors for God's sake. Wee shall shame the faces of many of God's worthy servants, and cause theire prayers to be turned into curses upon us till wee be consumed out of the good land whither wee are a goeing.

I shall shutt upp this discourse with that exhortation of Moses, that faithfull servant of the Lord, in his last farewell to Israell, Deut. 30. *Beloued there is now sett before us life and good, Death and evill, in that wee are commanded this day to loue the Lord our God, and to loue one another, to walke in his wayes and to keepe his Commandements and his Ordinance and his lawes,* and the articles of our Covenant with him, that *wee may liue and be multiplied, and that the Lord our God may blesse us in the land whither wee goe to possesse it. But if our heartes shall turne away, soe that wee will not obey, but shall be seduced, and worshipp and serue other Gods,* our pleasure and proffitts, *and serue them ;* it is

propounded unto us this day, *wee shall surely perishe out of the good land whither wee passe over this vast sea to possesse it ;*

Therefore lett us choose life
that wee, and our seede
may liue, by obeyeing His
voyce and cleaveing to Him,
for Hee is our life and
our prosperity.

POST OFFICE DEPARTMENT.

[It is well known, that little has been systematically published on the past history of the Post Office department in our country.—Such a subject might be individually and interestingly handled from its small beginnings to its present expanded and important relations.—To aid in preserving materials for the accomplishment of this subject,—the publishing Committee have prepared the ensuing article.—Most of the extracts and documents, which they here quote, are derived from the Massachusetts Archives.]

I.

Under General Court Records. 5th, 9 mo. 1639.

" For preventing the miscarriage of letters,—It is ordered that notice bee given, that Richard Fairbanks his house in Boston is the place appointed for all letters, which are brought from beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither;—are to bee brought unto him and he is to take care, that they bee delivered, or sent according to their directions, and hee is alowed for every such letter 1d. and must answer all miscarriages through his owne neglect in this kind ; provided that no man shall bee compelled to bring his letters thither except hee please."

II.

General Court Records. January 6—1673-4.

"Whereas the publick occasions of the Country doe frequently require that messengers be sent post and as yet no stated allowance is settled in such cases,—It is ordered by this Court and the authority thereof that from henceforth every person so sent upon the publicke service of the country shall be allowed by the Treasurer after the rate of 3d. a mile to the place to which he is sent, in money, as full satisfaction for the expense of horse and man. And no inholder shall take of any such messenger or others travayling upon publicke service more then 2s. pr bushall for oates and 4d. for hay, day and night."

III.

The petition of sundry Merchants respecting Letters.

To the Honourable General Court now sitting in Boston.

May 23*d*, 1677.

We whose names are under written, hearing many complaints made by Merchants and others, and several of us being sensible of the loss of letters; whereby Merchants especially, with their friends and employers in forraigne parts are greatly damnified; many times the letters imposted and throwne upon the Exchange so that who will may take them up; no person without some satisfaction being willing to trouble their houses therewith; so that letters of great moment are frequently lost:—our humble request, therefore, to this Honoured Court is, that they will please to depute some meet person to take in and convey Letters according to direction; and the Honoured Court sett the prices on letters, and state that affaire. And if this Honoured Court please, we suppose Lt. Richard Way may be a fit person for that service.

William Brattle,
Thomas Deane,
Hezekiah Usher,
John Usher,
Sampson Sheafe,
Edward Shippen,
Richard Knight,
John Hubbard,

Charles Lidget,
Benjamin Davis,
John Fayerweather,
John Frost
Richard Crisp,
Edward Drinker,
Henry Derings,
John Clarke,
John Pynchon, Jr.

The Deputies have granted the petitioners their desire herein; and, in Richard Way's roome doe make choice of Mr. John Hayward, the scrivener, to be the man, the Honored Magistrates consenting hereunto.

10*th May*, '77. WILLIAM TORREY, *Clerk.*

Consented to by the Magistrates.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

IV.

General Court Records. 1677, *Dec.* 28.

In answer to the request of severall merchants of Boston declaring that they have heard many complaints made by merchants and others that have been sensible of the losse of letters, whereby merchants with their friends and imployers in forreign parts are greatly damnified; many times letters are thrown upon the exchange that who will may take them up &c, therefore humbly desire this Court to depute some meete person to take in and convey letters according to their direction. This Court judgeth it meete to grant the petitioners request herein and haue made choyce of Mr. John Hayward, the Scrivener, to be the person for that service.

V.

An act encouraging a Post Office.

Whereas their most excellent Magesties, by their letters patents under the great seale of England bearing date the 17th day of February, in the yeare of our Lord 1691, have given unto Thomas Neale Esq., his Executors, Administrators and assignes, full power and authority to erect, settle, and establish within the chief ports of their Magesties' Colonies and Plantations in America an office or offices for the receiving and dispatching Letters and pacquets; and to

receive, send, and deliver the same under such rates and sums of money as the planters shall agree to give, and to hold and enjoy the same for the terme of twenty one years ; with such powers and clauses as are necessary on that behalf, as by the letters patents reference being thereunto had may more fully and largely appear ; and whereas Andrew Hamilton Esq. is deputed and constituted to govern and manage the said General Post Office for and throughout all their Magesties Plantations and Colonies in the main land or continent of America and the Islands adjoining thereunto, persuant to the directions of the said Letters Patents ; and whereas he the said Andrew Hamilton hath made application to his Excellency and Council, and Representatives, convened in General Assembly, that they would ascertaine and establish such rates and sums of money upon Letters and Pacquetts that shall be received and dispatched by the said Office or Officer, for the effectual encouragement of the said General Post Office and for the quicker maintenance of mutual correspondence amongst all the neighbouring Colonies and Plantations aforesaid, and that trade and commerce may be the better preserved ; *Be it therefore enacted by the Governor and Council and Representatives convened in General Assembly, and by the authority of the same,* that there be from henceforth A GENERAL LETTER OFFICE erected and established in some convenient place within the town of Boston, from whence all letters and pacquets whatsoever may be with speed and expedition sent into any part of the neighbouring colonies and plantations or the main land and continent of America, or unto any of their Magesties kingdoms and dominions beyond the seas ; at which said office all returns and ansuers may be likewise received ; and that one Master of the said General Letter Office shall from time to time be appointed by the said Andrew Hamilton, which said Master of the Office, or his servant or agent, and no other person or persons whatsoever, shall from time to time have the receiving, takeing up, ordering, dispatching, and sending post or with speed, and delivering of letters and pacquets whatsoever, which shall from time to time be sent to and from all and every the adjacent Colonies and Plantations on this main land and continent of America or any other their majesties kingdoms and dominions be-

yond the seas, where he the said Post Master general, shall settle or cause to be settled posts or running messengers for that purpose, except such letters of Merchants and Masters which shall be sent by any Masters of Ships, boat, or other vessels of merchandize by any other person employed by them for the carriage of such letters aforesaid according to the respective directions, and also except letters to be sent by any private friend or friends in their way of journey or travel, or by any messenger or messengers sent on purpose for or concerning the private affairs of any person or persons.

And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid that it shall and may be lawful to and for the Post Master General aforesaid, and his Deputy or Deputies by him thereunto sufficiently authorized, to demand, have, receive and take for the postage and conveyance of all such letters which he shall so convey, carry, or send post, as aforesaid, according to the several rates and sums of current money of this Province hereafter mentioned, not to exceed the same ; that is to say, for the post of every single letter from Europe, the West Indies, or other parts beyond the seas, two pence ; and all letters are to be accounted single, though they contain Bills of lading, Gazettes, Invoices, &c. and for each pacquet of letters from the places aforesaid, four pence ; and a pacquet shall be accounted three letters for the least ; and for the post of every single letter from Rhode Island to Boston, or from Boston to Rhode Island, six pence ; and so in proportion to the greatness and quantity of letters ; and for the post of each single letter from the post road in Connecticut Colony to Boston, nine pence ; and so in proportion as aforesaid ; and for the post of each single letter from the City of New-York, twelve pence ; and so in proportion as aforesaid ; and for the post of each single letter from the Provinces of East or West Jersey or Pennsylvania, fifteen pence ; and so in proportion as aforesaid : and for the post of each single letter from Maryland or Virginia, two shillings, and so in proportion as aforesaid. And for the post of each single letter from Salem, three pence ; from Ipswich, Newbury, or other places eastward of Salem within this Province, four pence ; and from Piscataqua, six pence ; and so in proportion as aforesaid. And if any letters or

pacquets shall lie and remain in the office uncalled for, by the space of forty eight hours, the Post Master then sending them forth to the respective houses of the persons to whom they are directed, shall have and receive one penny more for each letter or pacquet.

And be it further resolved by the Authority aforesaid, that no person or persons whatsoever, or body politic or corporate, other than the Post Master general aforesaid, shall presume to carry, recarry, or deliver letters for hire other than as before expressed, or to set up or employ any foot-post, horse-post, or pacquet boat whatsoever, for the carrying, conveying, and bearing of any letters or pacquets, by sea or land within this Province, or shall hire or maintain horses and furniture for the equipping of any persons riding post with a guide and horn, as is usual in their majesties' realm of England, upon the pain of forfeiting the sum of forty pounds current money of this Province for every several offence against the tenor of this present Act, to be sued and recovered in any Court of record within this Province, by bill, plaint or information ; wherein no essoyene, protection, or wager of law shall be allowed ; one half of the said forfeiture to their majesties, towards the support of the government of this Province and the contingent charges thereof; and the other half to the Post Master General, who shall sue and prosecute for the same.

And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that all letters and pacquets, that by any master of any Ship or vessel, or any of his company, or any passenger therein, shall or may be brought to this port of Boston other than such letters as are before excepted, shall, by such Master, passenger, or other person, be forthwith delivered to the Post Master of Boston for the time being, or unto his servants or agents, by him or them to be delivered according to the several and respective directions of the same, the said Post Master, or his servants paying to the Master of any such ship or vessel so delivering in his letters, a half penny for every letter or pacquet.

And it is further enacted by the Authority aforesaid, that the Post Master General, his officers or servants, shall continue constant posts for the carriage of letters to the several places and stages above mentioned, and shall seasonably and faithfully deliver forth the letters according

to the intent of this Act, upon pain of forfeiture for every omission five pounds; to be recovered as aforesaid; and to be disposed the one half to their majesties, as aforesaid, the other half to the party aggrieved who shall sue for the same.

And it is further enacted that the said Post Master, his agents or servants, upon the coming in of every Post, do mark every letter with a print, to show the day of the month and year when every letter came in.

And it is further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that if any ferryman within this their Majesties' Province shall at any time neglect, or refuse, or delay the conveying over his or their ferry, any post man or his horse, he shall forfeit the sum of five pounds, to be recovered and disposed as the penalty before by this Act laid upon such as shall set up any post or pacquet boat.

And it is further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that all letters of public concernment for their majesties' service, from time to time, and at all times, shall be received, dispatched away, and delivered with all possible speed, according to the respective directions thereon, free of all charge, and without demanding or receiving any money or pay for the same, any thing herein before contained notwithstanding.

Provided that this Act nor any thing therein contained, shall be and continue in force any longer than three years from and after the publication thereof, herein to the contrary notwithstanding.

Past in the affirmative.

To be sent to the Council for their concurrence,

WILLIAM BOND, *Speaker.*

Read three several times in the Council, and voted, past in the affirmative, June 9. 1693.

WILLIAM PHIPS.

ISAAC ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

VI.

To his Excellency the Governour, to the Honourable the Council, and to the Representatives convened in the General Assembly.

The humble application of Duncan Campbell, deputy Post Master, on behalf of the undertakers, and Col. Andrew Hamilton, Post Master General.

Whereas there is a Post Office erected by Thomas Neale, Esq. in these northern parts of America, by virtue of a patent granted under the great seale of England, for the benefit and encouragement of trade, and speedy intelligence, &c.—and whereas by an Act passed by the General Assembly, they have established the several rates for letters from stage to stage, and that the post should go ferriage free ; notwithstanding the aforesaid grant, we find, daily, several refractory persons, and the Post many times for two or three hours is waiting for other passengers, &c. —also masters of vessels deliver letters as they please, &c. all which is a great discouragement to this undertaking, of so great a benefit to this country, &c.—also it is humbly presented to this honourable Assembly that the charges of this Post Office are thrice the income ; he humbly desires that a salary may be settled for the carrying on of so advantageous a design, &c. The Governor and Assembly of New York have settled fifty pounds per annum for three years.

'Tis humbly desired that no person may be permitted to go on board of any Vessel to receive any letters before the packet boat, as 'tis the custom in other places.

This is left to your Excellency and the honourable Assembly's consideration.

Read in Council. Read and sent up.*

*[Nothing conclusively was done.]

VII.

To the Honourable William Stoughton, Esq. Governour, the Council, and Representatives of their Majesties' Province of the Massachusetts Bay, in New England, convened in General Assembly.

The Petition of Duncan Campbell, Post Master for the Town of Boston,—*Humbly sheweth,*

That whereas the General Court have enacted that all letters and pacquets that by any master of any ship or vessel, or any of his company, or any passenger therein, shall or may be brought to the port of Boston (other than such letters as are therein excepted) shall by such master, passenger, or other person be forthwith delivered to the Post Master of Boston for the time being, or unto his servants or agents by them to be delivered according to the respective directions of the same, &c. as in and by the Act of encouraging a Post Office doth more at large appear; notwithstanding which several persons do go on board ships on their first arrival, and receive sundry letters from passengers and others, before the same are delivered unto the Post Office, to the great lessening of the profits and revenue thereof, and to the damage of particular persons, there being no penalty imposed by said Act for the transgressors of the same.

Your Petitioner therefore prays that this honourable Court will be pleased to affix such penalty to the said Act, and to order that the same may be duly observed; and that offenders against it be liable to such punishment or forfeitures as your honours shall judge meet: and that all letters brought in any ship or vessel be delivered into the Post Office also under a penalty, except the letters of or belonging to the owners of such ship or vessel.

Your petitioner further prays this Honourable Court, that in consideration of his own case, charge, and diligence in tending and despatching away public letters out of the post road, and on days in which the post does not go (for which there is no allowance) you would please to free him from the payment of all public rates and taxes, as also that he may not be liable to pay excise for the retailing of strong drink

and other liquors, in case he shall see cause to do the same ; it being only what privileges are granted to the Post Masters in other their majesties' Plantations.

And your petitioner as in duty bound shall ever pray.

DUNCAN CAMPBLL.

Voted, upon reading the petition of Duncan Campbell, that all persons not bringing letter or letters (except such as the law excepts) that ought to be delivered to the Post Office, shall pay four times as much per letter as the letters are payable to the Post, and damages to be made good to the party injured in not having his or their letters by any person's default : and public rates to be allowed him, said Petitioner, till the end of the three years mentioned in the law referring to the Post Office.

March 8, 1694-5. Past in the affirmative by the House of Representatives, and sent up to the Honourable Lieutenant Governour and Council for consent.*

NEHEMIAH JEWETT, *Speaker.*

VIII.

To his Excellency Sir William Phips, Knight, Captain General and Governour in Chief in and over their Majesties' Province of the Massachusetts Bay, in New England, the Honourable Council and Representatives now assembled in General Assembly.

Duncan Campbell, in behalf of Andrew Hamilton, Esq. Post Master General of North America,—*Humbly sheweth,*

That whereas their Majesties have been graciously pleased to erect, settle, and establish a Post Office in these parts of America by their letters patents, granted unto Thomas Neale, Esq., which said Post Office has been duly kept and maintained by constant Posts in the trading part of this country for above a twelvemonth, and is of public use, benefit, and advantage, not only to merchants and other traders, but to every respective government, more especially to this Province, by reason that all public letters and expresses have been conveyed and dispatched

* [It does not seem to have been acted on by the Council.]

free of all charge ; and finding so small encouragement by letter that it will not countervail one half of the charge thereof:

Wherefore 'tis hoped this Honourable Court will take the premises into your prudent consideration, and not suffer so general a benefit to fail for want of due encouragement ; but that you will please to appoint and state some salary to be paid out of the public revenue towards the support of the said office for some time, as the neighboring Provinces have done ; that is to say, York hath allowed fifty pounds, and Hampshire twenty pounds *per annum*, for the space of three years.

All which is humbly offered by
Your Excellency's and Honors'
Humble servant,
DUNCAN CAMPBELL.

Read, June 19, 1694.

In answer to the petition of Duncan Campbell, *Voted*, that there be allowed twenty-five pounds *per annum* out of the public treasury of this Province for the two next years ensuing the date hereof, towards the encouragement of the Post Office.

Past in the affirmative by the House of Representatives, and sent up to his Excellency and Council for consent.

NEHEMIAH JEWETT, *Speaker.*

June 20, 1694.

Voted in Council that the sum of twenty-five pounds *per annum* for two years be paid Andrew Hamilton, Esq.

ISAAC ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

IX.

To the Right Honourable William Stoughton, Esq., Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief in and over his Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, the Honourable Council and Representatives of the said Province convened in General Assembly, May 27, 1696.

The petition of Duncan Campbell, Post Master in the town of Boston, in behalf of Andrew Hamilton, Esq. deputy Post-Master General for and throughout the several

Plantations and Colonies in the main land or Continent of America.—*Humbly sheweth,*

That whereas the Great and General Court or assembly of his Majesty's Province abovesaid, begun and held at Boston on the 31st day of May, 1693, upon application to them made by the said Andrew Hamilton, for ascertaining and establishing such rates and sums of money upon letters and pacquets that shall be received and dispatched by the officer or officers, appointed by the said Hamilton, in the principal ports and places within the Province for the effectual encouragement of the said General Post Office, and for the quicker maintenance of mutual correspondence amongst the neighbouring Colonies and Plantations, and that trade and commerce might be the better preserved, did make and pass an act, entitled *an act encouraging a Post Office*, to continue in force for the space of three years from the publication thereof, which term is near expired—and forasmuch as the said Post office is found to be of very great advantage to the Province, both in respect of the speedy conveyance and dispatch of letters and pacquets to the neighbouring governments, and also for the maintenance of trade and correspondence between particular persons.

Your Petitioner therefore, in behalf of the said Andrew Hamilton, humbly prays this Honourable Court that the aforecited act may be revived and continued for such further time as shall be thought meet, with such further clauses and additions for the obliging masters of Vessels and others to deliver their letters into the Post Office, and to restrain their delivering of them to any other person or persons; under such penalties and forfeitures as this Honourable court shall please to enact.—And whereas for foreign letters the rate now is two pence a piece, out of which the master that delivers the same into the office is to have an half penny, your petitioner prays that the rate for said letters may be advanced to three pence a piece, and the master that delivers them to have a penny thereout, which will be a great encouragement to masters not to deliver them to other persons.

Your petitioner also further prays, that in consideration of the small revenue arising by the said office in conse-

quence of the charge thereof, and of the benefit the same is to the public, and also of its conveying their letters and pacquets free of charge, this Honourable Court would also please to continue a salary, to be paid to the said Andrew Hamilton, towards his defraying the charge of said office, which most of the neighboring Provinces do allow,—the Province of New York paying fifty pounds, and New Hampshire twelve pounds *per annum* towards the same.

And your Petitioner as in duty bound shall ever pray.

THOMAS CAMPBELL.

June 6. Read.—10. Read a second time.

In the House of Representatives, *Voted*, in answer to this petition, that the within named Andrew Hamilton, Esq. be paid and allowed, out of the public treasury of this Province, the sum of five and twenty pounds for the year ensuing.

Sent up to the Lt. Governour and Council for their concurrence and consent.

PENN TOWNSEND, *Speaker.*

Voted a concurrence in Council, 11 July, 1696.

ISAAC ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

X.

The Memorial of John Campbell, Master of the Post Office of Boston and New England, relating to the Post Office, humbly offered to the Great and General Court or Assembly of his Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, now sitting at Boston, the 26th of May, 1703.

Imprimis. That the Patent for the Post Office in the north point of the Continent of America, granted by their excellent Majesties, King William and Queen Mary, in the fourth year of their reign, unto Thomas Neale, Esq. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, was for twenty-one years from the 17th of February, 1691, to the 17th of February, 1712.

2. That there was an Act passed in the General Court at Boston, for settling a Post Office by virtue of said Patent, in *anno* 1693, granting privileges as by said Act appears,

which was to be in force only three years, viz. to the year 1696; since which time no Act has been revived; for want whereof a great many irregularities are committed, and said office like to drop, and come to nothing.

3. That Col. Hamilton, the Post Master General in this country, deputed thereto by the Post Master General of England, &c. according to a clause in the Patent, being appointed and nominated by Thomas Neale, Esq. to erect and settle said Post Office, which accordingly he did, and is out of purse, several years ago, above £1400 sterling, in settling the same; and to this day is not yet able by the incomes thereof to defray the necessary charge in maintaining the same.

4. That Col. Hamilton, who was at the charge of settling said office, could never be reimbursed by said Thomas Neale, Esq., and was necessitated to take a mortgage of said Patents, else have nothing; so that the privilege of said Patent now devolves upon Col. Hamilton, and his heirs, Executors, &c.

5. That there are now ten years elapsed since the first settlement of the Post Office, and about a year and a half before the settlement, and about a year and a half to run out of the term of the Patent; and since Col. Hamilton is so much money out of pocket already, and the income is not yet sufficient to defray the necessary charge in upholding it, it will be but a just thing to revive the former Act, and to continue it to his Heirs, &c. during the term of the said Patent, with an additional amendment of some Act in several clauses and paragraphs thereof; so much is it advantageous and beneficial to the public, and does at least save the public £150 *per annum*, that otherwise must be paid for expresses if there were no post.

6. That every body carrying of letters to and from towns where Post Offices are settled, is a very great hindrance and discouragement to said office; often thereby letters from Connecticut Colony are carried to Piscataqua, and put into the office there some weeks and months after written and sent, and at last come from Piscataqua to Boston; so that the Office is blamed for it without a cause. And, on the contrary, letters from Piscataqua come in the Western mail.

7. That the letters from Europe and West Indies, and

other places that come in by sea, the one half is not brought to the Office. Those that do come pay but two pence, one penny of which goes to the Master, and those employed to receive them, and the other penny is lost in dead letters (remaining in the several Post Offices) of such persons that are dead and gone,—several letters for England and the West Indies, that we send away gratis,—and several letters that persons will not take up and pay for.

8. That the ferrymen are very backward in carrying those employed in the Post Office, and do require money sometimes ; yea often backward to dispatch expresses when sent by the Government,—do judge it proper that all employed in the Post Office should be ferry-free, both man and horse.

9. That in regard that the Post Master General, as is said, is incapacitated to give such salaries to the several Post Masters, as is requisite to discharge that trust as should be,—all persons concerned in said office should be freed from watchings, trainings, or any other public service ; and, either freed from rates, or excise free, or some other benefit equal to it.

10. That all Masters of Ships, &c. be obliged under a penalty, to deliver their letters at the Post Office, and to call for all letters on board his vessel from passengers and seamen ; which passengers and seamen shall incur the like penalty for not delivering them to the Master. And in case said Master do not deliver them himself at the said Office, but sends them either by one of his servants, passengers, or any other deputed by the Post Master to receive them, then said Master shall seal them up in a bag, always with an alphabetical list fairly drawn up, that no letters may be embezzled, as often they are. And in case the Post Master or Deputy, is necessitated to go on board for said letters, then the Master to have but one half of his allowance, the other half for the said Post Master and his Deputy or deputies.

11. For want of such an Act a great many letters are miscarried, and often letters come into the Office from one and the same ship, some two days after the first, some three or four days ; some two and three weeks ; and some two and three months ; which I can prove to be true.

12. That whereas there was usually allowed from this

Government, the first three years of the aforesaid Act, a salary for encouragement of said office, and nothing has been allowed since, it is requisite (with submission) that said salary may be now granted for the time elapsed, and for the future continued.

13. And that in the sixth paragraph of the former Act the port of Boston be added, and particular offices in other towns of this Colony.

14. That something might be done to cause people to pay for their letters when sent out.

15. That some clause in the Act be made for further encouragement ; that all towns in this Province, under some penalty, where no Post Office is settled, be obliged to call for their letters at the next post town, within some limited time, and pay the Post Master for them.

XI.

To his Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in Chief in and over her Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, &c., and to the Honourable her Majesty's Council and the Representatives of the same, convened in General Assembly, and now sitting in Boston, the 26th day of May, Anno Domini, 1703.

The humble Petition of John Campbell, Post Master of New England, &c. sheweth,—

That whereas the Post Office within this Province, ever since its first settlement has been found, and still continues to be of great use and service, and almost of absolute necessity to her Majesty's government and the commerce of her Majesty's subjects in this and the neighbouring Colonies ;—and whereas the Act of this Province that first settled the same was but temporary, and expired in the year 1696, without having ever been since revived; whereby the Post Office is now rendered very precarious and uncertain, and labours under so many disadvantagements, that, unless speedily and effectually supported, secured, and advanced by an Act of this Great and General Court or Assembly, it must necessarily fail and come to nothing, to the great hurt and injury of her Majesty's government

in this Country, and the great damage and loss of trade and commerce in these parts,—Your Petitioner being utterly discouraged and incapable of continuing the same, as it is now circumstanced,—your Petitioner, therefore, most humbly prays that your Excellency, and this great and general Assembly will be pleased to take the premises into your most mature and wise consideration ; as also the Memorial which your Petitioner does herewithal most humbly offer ; and for the future, so forward and provide for the Post Office, as that it may attain the end for which it was at first established. And your Petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray ;—being always,

Your Excellency's and Honours',
most humble, obedient
and faithful servant,
JOHN CAMPBELL.

We are humbly of opinion, that an Order be made by this great and general Assembly, that all Masters of Ships and Vessels arriving here, under the penalty of five pounds, deliver their letters to the Post Master, or his deputies ; sealed up in a bag or bundle, with an alphabetical list fairly drawn up;—for each letter to receive of said Post Master one half penny.

That the non-accustomed rates or prices, be paid for letters.

That a sum be allowed to Mr. John Campbell, for his encouragement to help support his charge ; he having hitherto taken care of public letters which otherwise must have had Expresses provided to forward them, £20 for the past, and £40 for the year ensuing ; and that the said Campbell be freed from impresses, trainings, and watches, during his employment of Post Master.

June 3, 1703.

ELISHA HUTCHINSON.
JOHN FOSTER.

Sent down for concurrence.

IS. ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

Die predict, viz. *June* 3. Read in the House of Representatives. *July* 22*d*, 1703, Concurred ; with an amend-

ment, viz. the sum for the time past to be £10, and for the years ensuing, £20.

JAMES CONVERSE, *Speaker.*

In Council, *July* 22*d,* 1703, read and accepted, and the sums of £20 and £40, inserted by the Council.

IS. ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

XII.

BOSTON, *July* 19*th,* 1703.

Memorandum,

That the present charge to maintain the Post Office between Piscataqua and Philadelphia, for Post Master, riders, and other incidental charges, *per annum,* amounts to about the sum of . . . . . £680,00,0.

of which charge the Post Master of New England paid, will amount to, *per annum,* about 453,06,8.

New York and Philadelphia, ... 226,13,4.

£680,00,0.

Which £453,06,8 is £113,06,8 per quarter, and is per month . . £37,15,6.

whereof received last month by letters inward . . £12,12,8.

and to receive of the several inferior posts outward since 9,04,8.

£21,17,4.

So falls short this month 15,18,2.

£37,15,6.

And as to foreign letters, which pay 2d. and 1-2d. whereof goes to the Master, the other 1-2d. expended on these that bring the letters ashore and to the office, and the other penny lost in dead letters remaining in the several offices; —so that the 2d. for foreign letters amounts in the end to nothing,—only supplies the deficiency of dead letters.

Which £37,15,6. per month is per week,	.	£9,09,0.
whereof received inwards last week,	£2,11,10.	
and to receive sent out last week,	£1,11,00.	
	£4,02,10.	
So falls short this week, . . .	5,06,02.	
		£9,09,00.
and makes short per annum about	. . .	£275,00,00.

XIII.

To his Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in chief in and over her Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, &c; and to the Honourable her Majesty's Council and the House of Representatives, convened in General Assembly, and now sitting in Boston, the 10th day of April, 1706.

The humble petition of John Campbell, Post Master of New England, sheweth ;—

That whereas it has been usual for your Petitioner to have an annual allowance from the Province, the better to enable him to a faithful discharge of his office, in which he has now served three years and an half, and has only had one year and an half's allowance as yet granted him;—and that your petitioner has already his petition lying before your Excellency and General Assembly, relating thereto, and to promoting the printing of the Weekly Intelligencer ;*—your Petitioner, therefore, most humbly prays that your Excellency and this Great and General Assembly, will be pleased to take the same into your mature and wise consideration.

And your Petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray; being always

Your Excellency's and Honour's,
most humble, obedient
and faithful servant,
JOHN CAMPBELL.

* [Reference is here made to *The Boston News-Letter*, a paper published by John Campbell; the first in the English Colonies, throughout the extensive Continent of North America. It was commenced April 24th, 1704; was printed by Bartholomew Green, and sold by Nicholas Boone, at his shop near the old Meeting-House.—*Pub. Com.*]

April 11*th*, 1706, Read.

12*th*, *Resolved* that the sum of twenty pounds be allowed and paid out of the public treasury to John Campbell, the petitioner, in consideration of his service in conveying of letters on her Majesty's service, by the weekly post, the last year ; and the like sum of twenty pounds for the said service the year current, ending the first day of July next.

Sent up for concurrence.

THOMAS OAKES, *Speaker*.

April 12*th*, 1706. *In Council.* Read and voted a concurrence to the first twenty pounds for the year past ; the other twenty pounds referred to consideration the next session ; the year not being up.

IS. ADDINGTON, *Secretary*.

XIV.

To his Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in Chief in and over her Majesty's province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, &c., and to the Honourable her Majesty's Council, and the House of Representatives convened in General Assembly, and now sitting in Boston, the 29th day of May, 1706.

The humble petition of John Campbell, Post Master of New England, sheweth—

That whereas it has been usual for your petitioner to have an annual allowance from this Province, the better to enable him to a faithful discharge of his post, (seeing the proprietor thereof is not able by the income of said office, which is less than the necessary charge, to give him any tolerable salary, proportionable to the trouble and charge attending it,) in which he has now served three years and nine months, and has had only two years and an half allowance paid him :—

And that your Petitioner, for a public good, above two years ago, has been at the cost and charge to print a weekly Letter of Intelligence, of both foreign and domestic occurrences, which was set at a more moderate price than

it was in some part of England, notwithstanding the charge here is above four times dearer than it would cost there ; yet your Petitioner has not had sufficient encouragement to defray the necessary charges thereof.

Your Petitioner, therefore, most humbly prays that your Excellency and this Great and General Assembly will be pleased to take the same into your most mature and wise consideration, so as to enable your Petitioner to a faithful discharge of both trusts.

And your Petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray; being always

Your Excellency's and Honours'
most humble, obedient
and faithful servant,
JOHN CAMPBELL.

In Council, June 14, 1706. Read and sent down.

July 23, 1706. *In the House of Representatives*, read.

October 28, 1706. Read.

In the House of Representatives, October 30, 1706.

Resolved, that the sum of thirty pounds be allowed and paid out of the public treasury to Mr. John Campbell, the petitioner, in full for his service to the Public unto this day.
THOMAS OAKES, *Speaker.*

In Council. Die predict.

Read and concurred.
IS. ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

XV.

Committee for the Post Office.

November 3*d*, 1708. *In Council.*

Ordered, that John Foster, Andrew Belcher, and Edward Bromfield, with such as shall be named by the Representatives, be a Committee to inspect and examine into the rates taken in the Post Office, for letters :—to consider of the alteration of the day of the post coming in ; and what

allowance may be meet to be made by the public for encouragement of the office ; and report the same.

Is. ADDINGTON, *Secretary.*

Sent down for concurrence.

In the House of Representatives.

November 4th, 1708. Read and concurred ; and that John Clark, Esq., Captain Charles Chambers, Mr. Nathaniel Blagrove, Mr. William Denison, and Captain Thomas Hutchinson, be a Committee to join in the affair abovesaid.

THOMAS OLIVER, *Speaker.*

XVI.

Memorandum. To his Excellency the Governour, from John Campbell, Post Master of New England.

Boston, November 18, 1709.

Eight years ago, Col. Hamilton, upon the death of the former Post Master, wrote to me to take upon me the management of the Post Offices; and by a letter to your Excellency for approbation, which was granted, I took it. Six months after I represented to the General Assembly that I could not serve, the salary was so small. Upon which, two Gentlemen of the upper house, (who are still of the same,) were ordered to confer with me about it ; whose opinion then was, (if they have not forgot it,) to allow me forty pounds *per annum.* Several then, of the lower house, were for allowing thirty pounds. Some were for advancing the price of the postage ; which I was not for condescending to. However, the lower house allowed twenty pounds, which was paid until three years ago. [Since which] I have had no allowance. The being of a Post Office saves the Country above £150 *per annum ;* which they must needs pay for expresses, besides what they do if there were no Post Office. The public letters I have passed free, yearly, upon the usual allowance, was to a great deal more than was paid me ; besides the charge of weekly sending your Excellency's letters to Roxbury, in times of snow or rain. The Queen will not augment the charge of the office to what it was in Col. Hamilton's time.

She is now at above two hundred pounds sterling charges yearly, to support it between New Hampshire and Pennsylvania, above 500 miles; and, had the several officers half salary allowed them, it would cost her Majesty above a hundred pounds sterling more.

And since the Post Master is denied his usual allowance, it is but just the public letters for the time past should be paid for, and the Post Master for sending your Excellency's letters to Roxbury; and, for the time to come, a proper method taken about conveying your Excellency's letters. And if this is denied the Post Master, he must, of necessity, represent it to the Post Master General of Great Britain, &c., which he has forborne to do these three years past, being put in hope by several that the General Court would prevent it.

November 18, 1709. *In Council.* Read and recommended.

XVII.

Copy of a letter from Frankland and Evelyn to Col. Hamilton.

General Post Office, February 20, 1716.

Colonel Hamilton,

We herewith send you the Resolutions of the House of Commons, on the rates of postage proposed for the conveyance of inland and foreign letters, whereby you will observe the rates for the letters to be conveyed through her Majesty's several dominions and governments on the Continent of America. We have sent you a dozen setts, that you may send one to the Governours of her Majesty's several Plantations and Colonies, that they may communicate the same to the respective Councils of State, to inform them of the Act that is likely to pass thereupon in Parliament. We send these by Colonel Nicholson; and are

Your affectionate friends,

THO. FRANKLAND,
J. EVELYN.

Col. Hamilton, at New York.

XVIII.

Votes of the House of Commons.

Mercurij 14. die Feb. 1710.

The orders of the day being read.

Resolved, That this House will, upon *Tuesday* Morning next, at Eleven a Clock, resolve itself into a Committee of the whole House, to consider farther of the Bill for the better preventing Bribery and Corruption, and other undue Practices in Elections of Members to serve in Parliament.

Ordered, That the Committee of Privileges and Elections be discharged from Hearing any more Causes this Session, than the four next Elections, besides the Election for the County of *Northumberland*.

A Petition of the Minister, Church-wardens, and several other Inhabitants of *Greenwich*, in the County of *Kent*, in behalf of themselves and others, poor Parishioners there, was presented to the House, and read, praying, That the Sum of 6000*l.* or what other Sum the House shall think fit, for rebuilding the Church of *Greenwich*, the Roof whereof lately fell down, (which so shattered the Walls, that the whole must be rebuilt) may be assigned for the Relief of the Petitioners.

Ordered, That the said Petition be referred to a Committee, and that they do examine the Matter thereof, and report the same to the House.

And a Committee was accordingly appointed.

Ordered, That it be an instruction to the said Committee, That they do enquire what Moneys remain in the Hands of the Commissioners for building the Church of St. *Paul's;* And that they do consider what the Produce of the Duties in Being may amount to, for the time to come, and make an Estimate what will be necessary for finishing and adorning the said Church, and other the Purposes in the Acts mentioned for building the Cathedral Church of St. *Paul's*, and report the same to the House.

Ordered, That it be an Instruction to the said Committee, That they do consider what Churches are wanting within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Suburbs thereof.

Ordered, That the Report from the Committee who were appointed to enquire upon what Invitation or Encouragement the *Palatines* came over, and what Moneys were expended in bringing them into *Britain*, and for maintaining them here, and by whom paid, be received upon *Tuesday* Morning next.

Mr. *Conyers* (according to Order) reported from the Committee of the whole House, who were to consider farther of Ways and Means for raising the Supply granted to Her Majesty, the Resolutions they had directed him to report to the House; and he read the same in his Place, and afterwards delivered them in at the Table, where they were read, and agreed unto by the House, and are as follows, viz.

Resolved, That towards raising the Supply granted to Her Majesty, Her Majesty's Revenues, both Inland and Foreign, to arise in the General Letter-Office, or Post-Office, or the Office of Post-Master General, be increased.

Resolved, That the said Increase be made, by adding One Penny to the present Rate of Two Pence, for every single Letter, carried within 80 *English* Miles distance from *London*, and by adding proportionable Rates for double and treble Letters and Pacquets, carried the same Distance.

Resolved, That the said Increase be also made, by adding One Penny to the present Rate of Three Pence for every single Letter carried in *England*, above 80 such Miles from *London*, or to the town of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, and by adding proportionable Rates for double and treble Letters and Pacquets so carried.

Resolved, That the said Increase be likewise made, by adding One Penny to the present Rates of Three Pence and Two Pence, payable for Letters, passing between *London* and *Edinburgh*, or between *London* and *Dumfreize*, or *Cockburn-Speth*, and by adding proportionable Rates for double and treble Letters and Pacquets so carried.

Resolved, That the said Increase be made, by establishing a Rate of Four Pence (in lieu of the present Rates,) for every single Letter carried any Length in *Scotland*, being above 80 Miles distance from *Edinburgh*, and by settling proportionable Rates for double and treble Letters and Pacquets so carried; and that the present Rates for

carrying Letters in *Scotland*, to and from *Edinburgh*, within 80 Miles distance thereof, be continued as they are now.

Resolved, That the present Rates for carrying of Letters and Pacquets, in respect to *Ireland*, be continued.

Resolved, That the said Revenue be increased, by Settling a Rate of One Penny, for every Letter or Pacquet, directed on Board, or brought from any Ship or Vessel, Riding or stopping in any of Her Majesty's Harbours or Ports.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets, passing or repassing by the Carriage, usually called the *Penny-Post*, within eight *English* Miles from *London*, do pay after the Rate of Three Half-Pence.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets, conveyed or re-conveyed in the Cross-Roads, and all By or Way Letters and Pacquets, do pay the same Rates, in Proportion to the Distances of the Places to which they shall be directed from the places at which they shall be put in, as Letters and Pacquets, conveyed and re-conveyed on the several Great Roads, are rated to pay.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets coming from any Part of *France* to *London* (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay Ten-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling and Eight-pence for every double Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Three Shillings and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through *France*, to any Part of *Spain* or *Portugal* (Port paid to *Bayonne*) and from *Spain* and *Portugal* through *France* to *London*, do pay One Shilling and Six-pence for every single Letter, Three Shillings for every double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through *France*, to any part of *Italy* or *Sicily*, by the Way of *Lyons*, or to any Part of *Turkey*, by the Way of *Marcelia;* and from any of those Parts through *France* to *London* (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling and Three-pence for every single Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every double Letter, Three Shillings and Nine-pence for every treble Letter, and Five Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets coming from any Part of the *Spanish-Netherlands* unto *London* (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay Ten-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling and Eight-pence for every double Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Three Shillings and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *Spanish-Netherlands* to any Part of *Italy* or *Sicily*, (Port paid to *Antwerp*) and from any Part of *Italy* or *Sicily*, through the *Spanish-Netherlands* to *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *Spanish-Netherlands*, to any Part of *Germany*, *Switzerland*, *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and all Parts of the *North*, and from any of those Parts through the *Spanish-Netherlands* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, that all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *Spanish-Netherlands*, to any Part of *Spain* or *Portugal*, and from any part of *Spain* or *Portugal* through the *Spanish-Netherlands* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling and Six-pence for every single Letter, Three Shillings for every double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets coming from any Part of the *United-Provinces* unto *London* (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay Ten-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling and Eight-pence for every double Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Three Shillings and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *United-Provinces*, for any Part of *Italy* or *Sicily*, and from any Part of *Italy* or *Sicily* through the *United-Provinces* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *United-Provinces*, to any Part of *Germany*, *Switzerland*, *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and all Parts of the *North*, and from any of those Parts and Places through the *United-Provinces* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *United Provinces*, unto any part of *Spain* or *Portugal*, and from any part of *Spain* or *Portugal*, through the *United-Provinces* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay One Shilling and Six-pence for every single Letter, Three Shillings for every double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing from *London* through the *Spanish-Netherlands* or the *United-Provinces*, to *Hamburgh*, (Port paid to *Antwerp* or *Amsterdam*) and from *Hamburgh* through the *Spanish-Netherlands* or the *United-Provinces* unto *London*, (in lieu of the present Rates) do pay Ten-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling and Eight-pence for every double Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Three Shillings and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets passing between *London*, *Spain*, or *Portugal*, by Pacquet-Boats, shall pay One Shilling and Six-pence the single Letter, Three Shillings the double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence the treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *London* to *Jamaica*, *Barbadoes*, *Antegoa*, *Montserat*, *Nevis* and St. *Christophers*, in *America*, and from any of those places to *London*, do pay the present Rates of One Shilling and Six-pence for every single Letter, Three Shillings for every double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *London* to *New-York*, in *North-America*, and thence to *London*, do pay the present Rates of One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from any Part of the *West-Indies* to *New-York*, do pay Four-pence for every single Letter, Eight Pence for every double Letter, Twelve Pence for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York*, to any Places within 60 *English* Miles thereof, and thence back to *New-York*, do pay Four Pence for every single Letter, Eight Pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York* to *Perth-Amboy*, the chief Town in *East New-Jersey*, and to *Bridlington*, the chief Town in *West New-Jersey*, and from each of those Places back to *New-York*, and from *New-York* to any Place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and from each of those Places to *New-York*, do pay Six Pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen Pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Perth-Amboy* and *Bridlington*, to any Place not exceeding 60 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Four Pence for every single Letter, Eight Pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four Pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Perth-Amboy* and *Bridlington*, to any Place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Six Pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen Pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York* to *New-London*, the chief Office in *Connecticut*, in *New-England*, and to *Philadelphia*, the Chief Town in *Pennsylvania*, and from those Places back to *New-York*, do pay Nine Pence for every single Letter, Eighteen Pence for every double Letter, Two Shillings and Three-pence for every treble Letter, and Three Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-London* and *Philadelphia*, to any Place not exceeding 60 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Four Pence

for every single Letter, Eight Pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four Pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-London* and *Philadelphia*, to any place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and so back again, do pay Six Pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen Pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York* aforesaid, to *Newport*, the chief Town in *Rhode-Island*, and *Providence-Plantation* in *New-England*, and to *Boston*, the chief Town in *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New-England* aforesaid, and to *Portsmouth*, the chief Town in *New-Hampshire* in *New-England* aforesaid, and to *Annapolis*, the chief Town in *Maryland*, and from every of those Places to *New-York*, do pay One Shilling for every single Letter, Two Shillings for every double Letter, Three Shillings for every treble Letter, and Four Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Newport, Boston, Portsmouth,* and *Annapolis* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 60 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Four-pence for every single Letter, Eight-pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Newport, Boston, Portsmouth,* and *Annapolis* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Six-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen-pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York* aforesaid, to the Chief Offices in *Salem*, and *Ipswich*, and to the Chief Office in *Piscataway*, and to *Williamsburgh*, the Chief Office in *Virginia*, and from every of those Places to *New-York*, do pay One Shilling and Three-pence for every single Letter, Two Shillings and Six-pence for every double Letter, Three Shillings and Nine-pence for every treble Letter, and Five Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from the Chief Offices in *Salem, Ipswich, Piscataway*, and *Williamsburgh* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 60 *English* Miles,

and thence back again, do pay Four-pence for every single Letter, Eight-pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from the said Chief Offices in *Salem*, *Ipswich*, *Piscataway*, and *Williamsburgh* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Six-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen-pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *New-York* aforesaid, to *Charles-Town*, the Chief Town in North and South *Carolina*, and from *Charles-Town* aforesaid to *New-York*, do pay Eighteen-pence for every single Letter, Three Shillings for every double Letter, Four Shillings and Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Six Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Charles-Town* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 60 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Four-pence for every single Letter, Eight-pence for every double Letter, One Shilling for every treble Letter, and One Shilling and Four-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets from *Charles-Town* aforesaid, to any Place not exceeding 100 *English* Miles, and thence back again, do pay Six-pence for every single Letter, One Shilling for every double Letter, Eighteen-pence for every treble Letter, and Two Shillings for every Ounce.

Resolved, That all Letters and Pacquets to be conveyed by the Post to or from *Donashadee*, or some other convenient Port in *Ireland*, to Port *Patrick*, or some other convenient Port in that Part of *Great-Britain* called *Scotland*, over and above the *Inland* Rates aforesaid, do pay Two-pence for every single Letter, Four-pence for every double Letter, Six-pence for every treble Letter, and Eight-pence for every Ounce.

Resolved, That the Post Master General, and his Deputies, do take the same Rates for furnishing Horses and Furniture to Persons Riding Post, according to the former Act: But if he or they will furnish any Person to ride

Post, without Guide and Horn, he and his Deputies may, in that Case, take Four-pence *per* Mile (in lieu of the present Rates of Three-pence for each Horse *per* Mile.) And if the Poster will ride with a Guide, then such Guide to have Six-pence for the whole Stage he rides, instead of Four-pence allowed by the former Act.

Resolved, That the former Acts made in *England* and *Scotland*, relating to the Post Office, be repealed; and that in lieu thereof, one Géneral Act be made for Establishing a General Post Office for *Great-Britain*, and other Her Majesty's Dominions, and for Foreign Parts.

Ordered, That a Bill be brought in upon the said Resolutions, and that Mr. *Conyers*, Mr. Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, Sir *Thomas Powys*, Mr. Attorney General, Mr. Solicitor General, and Mr. *Lownds*, do prepare and bring in the same.

The House (according to Order) resolved itself into a Committee of the whole House, to consider farther of the Supply granted to Her Majesty; And after some time spent therein, Mr. Speaker resumed the Chair, and Mr. *Conyers* reported from the Committee, That they had come to a Resolution, which they had directed him to report, when the House will please to receive the same.

Ordered, That the Report be received to Morrow Morning.

Mr. *Conyers* also acquainted the House, That he was directed by the Committee to move that they may have Leave to sit again.

Resolved, That this House will, upon *Monday* Morning next, resolve itself into a Committee of the whole House, to consider farther of the Supply granted to Her Majesty.

Ordered, That the Committee of Privileges and Elections, and all other Committes, which were to set this Afternoon, be adjourned.

And then the House adjourned till to Morrow Morning, Nine a Clock.

By Virtue of an Order of the House of Commons, *I do appoint* Samuel Keble *and* Henry Clements *to Print these Votes; And that no other Person presume to Print the same.*

W. Bromley, *Speaker.*

XIX.

John Campbell's petition.

To his Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in chief in and over her Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, &c., and to the Honourable her Majesty's Council, at Boston, May the 24th, 1711.

The humble petition of John Campbell, Post Master of New England.

Sheweth,—that it has been usual for your petitioner to have an annual allowance from this Province for his care and trouble about the public letters, and especially for forwarding your Excellency's letters every week to Roxbury; which allowance was granted by the General Court, in addition to the small salary he had to uphold the said office, which the Queen is not willing yet to augment, in regard that the incomes of the Post Office General in America are not able to defray the necessary charge of the same; which allowance has not been granted to your petitioner these four years and six months past, notwithstanding he has taken due care of forwarding the public letters, and every year addressed your Excellency and Honourable Council and Assembly for the said allowance, which ought not only to be granted on the aforesaid consideration, but also for his trouble and care in setting up a public Intelligence weekly, found of great benefit and advantage, on several accounts, to the public; the charge and trouble whereof is very considerable, and income very small, seeing he cannot vend two hundred and fifty copies of one impression.

Your petitioner, therefore, humbly prays, that seeing the General Court has hitherto taken no cognizance of his petition, and that he has now laid before your Excellency and Council his account of the public letters, and sending your Excellency's letters to Roxbury every week; your Excellency and Council will be pleased to take the same into your most mature and wise consideration, not only to grant and order the payment of the said account, but also

a further encouragement on consideration of the public Intelligence.

And your Petioner, as in duty bound shall ever pray; being always

Your Excellency's and Honours'
most humble, obedient
and faithful servant,
JOHN CAMPBELL.

XX.

To his Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq., Captain General and Governour in chief of her Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, and to the Honourable her Majesty's Council, and the House of Representatives convened in general Assembly, and now sitting in Boston, the 17th day of October, 1711.

The humble petition of John Campbell, Post Master of New England, Sheweth ;—

That whereas your Petitioner has had a yearly allowance from this government the better to enable him to discharge his trust in the management of the said Office, and taking due care of the public letters; which saves this Colony considerable in a year.

Your Petitioner has also set on foot a weekly Letter of Intelligence, at his own cost and charge, for foreign and domestic occurrences ; which has been found of public use and service on several accounts, particularly to prevent a great many false reports.

And, notwithstanding your Petitioner has annually presented his petition to the General Court for his allowance, he has had none these five years past, nor yet any allowance to encourage the carrying on the Intelligence ; he has herewith presented his account.

And seeing God in his providence has been pleased, by the late awful fire in Boston, to deprive your petitioner, not only of his houses lately re-edified, but of his Printing house, press, and the greater part of his letters, house-

hold goods, &c., and being also indebted to his several workmen : *

Your Petitioner, therefore, humbly prays that your Excellency and this great and general Assembly will be pleased to take the premises into your most mature and wise consideration, and grant your Petitioner his account, and what further encouragement seemeth you meet, to enable your Petitioner to a faithful discharge of his post, and carrying on the Intelligence, which the small incomes thereof are not able to countervail the charge.

And your petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray; being always

Your Excellency's and Honours'
most humble, most obedient
and faithful servant,
JOHN CAMPBELL.

October 19, 1711. *In Council*, read and sent down, with a recommendation to the House for allowance of the Petitioner's account to this time of £142. 3. 11.

In the House of Representatives. October 19, 1711, Read. Nov. 6, Read and committed.—March 18, Read.

XXI.

In the Boston News Letter No. 557 from December 13th to December 20, 1714, Mr. Campbell publishes the following.

By order of the Post Master General of North America.

These are to give notice that on monday night last, the sixth of this instant December, the western post between Boston and New York, set out for once a fortnight the three winter months of December, January, and February, and to go alternately from Boston to Saybrook and Hartford, to exchange the mail of letters with the New York rider.

* [For a particular account of this destructive fire the publishing Committee refer to No. 391 of *the Boston News Letter*, October 9, 1711 (Mr. Campbell's paper.) to the *Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, first series, Vol. III. p. 269; IV. 211. and in V. 62, a circumstantial and affecting narrative.—The Post Office, and Allen's printing house were consumed in the conflagration. The following week the News Letter was again printed at Green's printing house in Newbury street, with this imprint, "Boston: printed in Newbury street, for John Campbell, Post Master."]

The first turn for Saybrook to meet the New York rider on Saturday night last, the 13th current. The second turn he sets out at Boston on Monday night, the 20th current, to meet the New York rider at Hartford, Saturday night the 25th current, to exchange mails.

All persons that send letters from Boston to Connecticut, from and after the 15th instant, are hereby notified first to pay the postage of the same.

The western post comes not in till Saturday next.

XXII.

Public notice given by John Campbell, Post Master, in the Boston News Letter, No. 574, April 18th, 1715.

Complaint being made to the Deputy Post Master General of New England, by several Gentlemen, merchants and others, of sundry persons going on board Vessels at their arrival in the port of Boston, and taking up their letters, pretending to deliver the same on shore according to their respective directions; and others pretending to carry them to the Post Office;—instead of which, the said letters are long detained from the owners; several often lost, and never delivered; others embezzled and opened; to the great loss and prejudice of the merchants by the deficiency of their correspondence and discovery of their secrets.

To prevent which great abuse for the future, notice is hereby given unto all masters and Passengers, arriving in any port in New England, carefully to observe the directions of the Act of Parliament made for establishing a Post Office in all his Majesty's dominions;—which words are to this purpose—"that all Masters and Passengers on their arrival, do forthwith deliver all such letters as they shall have, only at the Post Office, unto the Post Master or his Deputy, upon pain of forfeiting five pounds British money for every such offence in delivering any letters to any other. Upon which delivery the Master is to receive a penny for every such letter, signing a certificate to the Post Master or Deputy of the number of letters delivered, the time when, and the vessel's name they came by."

It is also provided in the same Act, on the like penalty of five pounds, that no person or persons whatsoever shall

convey, carry, recarry or deliver any letters other than the Post Master or his Deputy.

And any who shall for the future inform against the person or persons that go on board vessels to take up any person or persons letters, to detain the delivery of the same, shall be not only entitled to the penalty granted by law against such a person, but be likewise sufficiently rewarded.

And for the benefit and advantage of merchants and others, it is thought very proper for every Master (as it has been usual) to make a fair alphabetical list of the names and number of letters in his bags; which list hung up at the Office door, would soon resolve any persons if they had any letters by such a ship. And such Master as cannot conveniently come with his bag of letters to the Office, may seal the same with the said list in it, and send it by one of his servants; which Master, on demand, shall be paid for each letter at his coming to the Office; as also immediately to his servant as each Master shall direct.

XXIII.

From the Boston News Letter, No. 577. *May* 2, 1715.

Had the undertaker any suitable encouragement either by salary, or any tolerable number to take the Intelligence by the year, he would have printed a sheet weekly, to foward the intelligence. But since he has not, he must do the best he can.

XXIV.

[In 1718, Campbell was removed from the Post Office; and the Right Honourable the Post Master General in England named Mr. Philip Musgrave to succeed him; but the appointment itself being assigned to Andrew Hamilton, Esq., Deputy Post Master General for North America, on the 13th of September, 1718, he placed Mr. William Brooker in the office.

In the News Letter of March 7, 1728, is this obituary notice; "on Monday evening last, the 4th current, about eight o'clock, died here John Campbell, Esq. age 75 years; formerly Post Master of this place, publisher of

the Boston News Letter for many years, and one of his majesty's justices of peace for the County of Suffolk."

In 1725, HENRY MARSHALL was appointed Post Master. *Pub. Com.*]

XXV.

To the Honourable William Dummer, Esq., Lieutenant Governour and Commander in Chief, the Honourable the Council and House of Representatives for the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, in General Court assembled at Boston, the 22nd day of November, 1727.

The Memorial of Henry Marshall, Post Master, residing at Boston, aforesaid—

Humbly sheweth, That whereas your Memorialist hath kept the said office for two years past, or thereabout, and hath at all times taken care of the public letters belonging to the Government, for which service his predecessors, as he has been informed, used to be paid by order of the General Assembly; but the memorialist having never yet received any thing, and the other governments on the Continent making an allowance for services of the like nature; he, therefore, most humbly prays your Honours, that you will be pleased to allow him for his said service what in your great wisdom you shall see fit.

And as in duty bound, the memorialist shall ever pray.

H. MARSHALL.

In the House of Representatives, December 2nd, 1727. Read and committed to the Committee for petitions.

The Committee having considered this memorial, are of opinion, that the sum of two pounds be allowed and paid out of the public treasury to Henry Marshall for his past service in taking care of the public letters; and that hereafter a particular account of service of the like nature be laid before this Court, before any thing be allowed therefor.

JOHN QUINCY, *per order.*

In the House of Representatives, January 4th, 1727. Read and accepted, and resolved that the sum of forty shillings be allowed and paid out of the public treasury to the Memorialist, Henry Marshall, for his past service in taking care of the public letters ; and that hereafter a particular account of his service of the like nature be laid before this Court, before any allowance be made therefor.

Sent up for concurrence.

WILLIAM DUDLEY, *Speaker.*

In Council. January 5, 1727. Read and concurred.

J. WILLARD, *Secretary.*

Consented to.

WILLIAM DUMMER.

XXVI.

Secretary's certificate relating to Head Lynch, Esq.

Province of the Massachusetts Bay.

These are to certify whom it may concern, that there is delivered into my hands a Bond, or obligation, under the hands and seals of Ellis Huske and William Pepperrell, Esq. in the sum of five hundred pounds sterling, to be paid to Head Lynch, Esq. deputy Post Master General of North America, in case the said Ellis Huske shall not faithfully discharge the Office of Deputy Post Master of Boston, and the district thereto belonging, as particularly expressed in the said Bond.

J. WILLARD, *Secretary.*

Boston, March 7, 1742–3.

XXVII.

Establishment for a Carrier.

In the House of Representatives, Juné 18th, 1760.

Voted, That a carrier be employed to ride from Boston to Albany, and back again to Boston, once every fortnight, during the present campaign, to carry the several public dispatches, that may be necessary to be sent. And, also,

that the said carrier carry to and from the soldiers in the service of the Province, such letters as they may write home, and as may be sent to them.—And that such carrier be allowed for every such journey and duly performing the same, the sum of six pounds out of the public treasury.

Sent up for concurrence.

JAMES OTIS, *Speaker.*

In Council, June 18, 1760.

Read and concurred.

A. OLIVER, *Secretary.*

Consented to.

T. HUTCHINSON.

XXVIII.

Copy of a Letter from the Right Honourable the Earl of Halifax to his Excellency the Governour, dated St. James's, August 11*th,* 1764.

SIR,

It being of great importance and advantage to his Majesty's service, and to the commercial interests and general convenience of his Majesty's subjects in North America, that the conveyance of letters by the Post should be facilitated and extended throughout the Colonies upon that extensive Continent, his Majesty's Post Master General is concerting measures for those purposes: and, as it cannot be doubted but the Legislatures of the several Colonies will readily and cheerfully contribute to the success of a plan, from which they may expect to derive the benefit of a regular, safe, and speedy correspondence:—I am commanded to signify to you his Majesty's pleasure, that you should recommend it to the Assembly of the Colony under your government, to provide for the establishment of ferries, and erecting proper buildings on the water side, wherever the same may be found necessary, that the Posts may meet with no delays or interruptions in passing.

His Majesty's Post Master General having also represented that a Map of the Province under your Government,

with the present course of the Posts throughout the same clearly marked out, would be of great use to him in the present undertaking ; I am to desire that you will procure and transmit such a Map, together with a state of such alterations, as you apprehend to be wanting for the better regulation and improvement of the said Posts. And you will give your constant aid and support to the Post Masters, within your Government, in the execution of their office, which is so immediately calculated for the public benefit.

XXIX.

Petition of David Hyde.

To his Excellency Sir Francis Bernard, Baronet and Governor in Chief, the Honourable the Council, and House of Representatives in General Court assembled.

The petition of David Hyde, of Boston, Post rider, *humbly sheweth*,—

That he was in the month of September last employed by the selectmen of Boston, to carry Expresses to the selectmen of the other towns in this Province, relative to matters of a public and important nature, which required the greatest dispatch ; he, therefore, thought himself obliged in faithfulness to his employers, to ride from Belchertown to Montague on the 18th of September, being Lord's day ; for which he was brought before the Honourable Court of Sessions for the County of Hampshire, convicted, and sentenced to pay a fine to the King of ten shillings, and had costs taxed at eighteen shillings, which with the expenses and loss of time, has been a considerable damage, as well as trouble to your petitioner.

Your petitioner presumes not to make any reflections upon the treatment he has received ; but throws himself upon the favour of the Honourable Court, praying that his case may be considered, and such redress given, as to your Excellency and Honours may seem meet. And, as in duty bound, shall ever pray. DAVID HYDE.

BOSTON, *July* 1, 1769.

In the House of Representatives, July 13*th*, 1769.

Resolved, that the sum of one pound eight shillings be allowed and paid out of the public treasury of this Province, to the petitioner, David Hyde, in full consideration of his extraordinary expenses in the foregoing petition mentioned.

Sent up for concurrence.

F. Cushing, *Speaker.*

In Council, July 13, 1769. Read and non-concurred.

John Cotton, *D. Secretary.*

XXX.

Annals of Salem, p. 487. *March* 28, 1774. A committee of correspondence in Salem receive a communication from a similar body in Boston, on the subject of establishing Post Offices and Post riders independent of Parliament.

Ibid. p. 495. *May* 25, 1775. The Provincial Congress take the concerns of the Massachusetts Post Offices into their own hands.

XXXI.

In Committee of Safety.

Cambridge, *April* 28, 1775.

Voted to recommend to the Colony Congress now sitting in Watertown, and it is recommended accordingly, to make an establishment for post riders between the Massachusetts forces and the town of Worcester ; also, that the said Congress take such order as they may think proper, to prevent any town or district taking any notice of his Excellency General Gage's precepts for calling a general Assembly. William Cooper, *Secretary.*

PAPERS RELATIVE TO THE RIVAL CHIEFS,

D'AULNEY AND LA TOUR,

GOVERNORS OF NOVA SCOTIA.

PREFATORY REMARKS.

[There is a romance of History as well as a History of Romance.—To the former class, belong many incidents in the early periods of New England and its adjacent Colonies.—The following papers pertain to events of a similar order. They refer to two persons; D'Aulney* and La Tour. These were individuals of respectable intellect and education,—of noble families and large fortune. While the first was a zealous and efficient supporter of the Romish Church, the second was less so, from his frequent connexion with others of a different faith. The scene of their immediate jurisdiction, their prominent actions, their exhibition of various passions and talents, their conquests and defeats, their career and end, as exerting an influence on their associates as well as themselves, on other communities as well as their own,—was laid in Nova Scotia. This phrase then comprised a Territory vastly more extensive, than it does now, as a British Province. It embraced not only its present boundaries, which were long termed Acadie, but, also, about two thirds of the State of Maine. So large a district reached as far Westward as Kennebeck, or, as the parlance then was, to the Virginias. It was a portion of the domain claimed by the Court of St. Cloud and called New France. Its Latin etymology was derived from its being denominated New Scotland, when granted to Sir William Alexander, in 1621, by James First of England, as a Palatinate of his maternal kingdom.

The ensuing letters and documents, concerning the previous subject, are from the archives of Massachusetts. They appear either to have escaped the searching operation of Hutchinson, while collecting materials for his History of this Province; or, if copies of them were taken by him, they were probably lost, when a mob threw his papers into the street and destroyed a large portion of them. It will be perceived, that they, like most of the compositions in their day, are not remarkable for polish and perspicuity of style. It will, also, be evident, that the French papers, which came to our hands in an English dress, retain too much

* [Some communications, to and from Aulney, are spelt Aulnay, having the vowel *a*, in the last syllable instead of *e*. Others have Aunay, leaving out the consonant, *l*. This mode of orthography is retained by Dictionnaire Historique par Chaudon et Delandine. Winthrop, Hubbard, Hutchinson, Hazard and others have Aulney. This American method of writing the name, will be adopted in the subsequent pages. *Pub. Com.*]

of their own idiom, and thereby read heavily. Two of the letters,—III and X,—one in French and the other in Latin, were found untranslated, but are here presented in our language. *Pub. Com.*]

I.

We, Charles De Menou, Knight, Lord of Aulney, Lieutenant General for the King in all the coasts of Acadie, under the charge of my Lord, the most eminent Cardinal Duke of Richelieu, great Master, Chief and Superintendent General of the Navigation and Commerce of France, having judged meet for the service of his Majesty of my said Lord, and for the advancement of the French Colonies, to send unto our habitation of La Heve, one of our Barques of the burthen of twenty four tons, and therein to place a faithful person, as well to command as for to receive the merchandize of trade, which we will to be delivered unto him by the commissioner of the said place, from thence to go to Campseau,* the Bay of Island,—and further so far as our power doth extend to trade and hold commerce with savages, and during the said voyage to employ themselves unto fishing of Cod for the aliment and nourishment of Colonies of the said Country. For these causes, upon the confidence which we have in the person of Pilot Mutton, of his capacity and experience in sea affairs, and of the faithfulness, manners and wisdom of the above said, we have ordained, committed and deputed, and do ordain, commit and depute for Master and Commander in the said Barque, and to take such merchandise as shall be unto him delivered by the commissioner of the said La Heve, according unto the invoice, which hath been unto him given, concerning the said trade and fishing, and this being done, to return unto us unto Port Royal, to give unto us a faithful account of his voyage. We, also, give in charge unto all his company, that they yield obedience unto him under the said quality, as unto our own person, upon pain of contrary walking unto the ordinances of his Majesty. We, also, pray all Lieutenant Generals, Sea Captains, Chiefs of Squadrons, Guards of Forts, Havens and passages, and all other officers of His Majesty above said, and all the allies of the crown of France, that they lend unto him strong

* Canso.

hand and assistance in case of need, promising the like on our behalf, occasion presenting. In witness hereof we have signed these presents and caused the seal of our arms to be set hereunto at Port Royal, the place of our residence, Monday this ninth of March, one thousand six hundred forty and three. Caused to be signed by our Secretary,

MAILLET, *Secretary.*

AULNEY.
By my above said Lord.

II.

Sieur D'Aulney's letter to Mr. Endecott, Governor, by Mr. Allen, who carried our letter to Monsieur D'Aulney, when he took him at Sea.—To the Sieurs, the Gentlemen, Magistrates of the Great Bay, at Boston.*

SIRS,

Having (according to the express order which I received from the King, my Master,) dispatched a Shallop unto the Bay to give you knowledge of his pleasure, concerning a subject of his, who, by means of assistance received from you, hath, to this present, continued in formal rebellion; I thought good by the same, a person of trust, who, being fully informed of my apprehensions, might satisfy you by the discourse you might have with him, and demand justice and due reason in all kind, for certain grievances, wrongs, and injuries, which mine and myself have received from yours. It is that, which caused me to make choice of Mr. Marie, my experienced, faithful friend, to come unto you, and we knowing that letters and paper bear not such discourse nor reply, to content those that read them, by that, which I have learned from Mr. Allen, you will not take in ill part this my visit per Mr. Marie, seeing it tendeth to no other thing, than that whereof yours is full. It makes me hope for (joining therewith the great order, which you observe in your Government and that civility, which is natural unto you, also, your generousness towards all your neighbours and allianced) all that satisfaction, which I can desire to all those complaints, he may make unto you about

* Captain John Allen.

what is past. Sirs, it is that, which makes me cut short all that, which may concern the interest either of my master or myself, referring it to Mr. Marie and Mr. Allen, with whom I have had, since his abode with me, divers discourses and hath in part given me to understand the particulars, which have troubled you. He will tell you (as much as his memory will bear) the reasonings I have had with him. And, as for the particulars wherein yours maketh instances, fearing lest Mr. Marie should not give you all that contentment, which you and I might wish, I shall, according to your desire, endeavour to satisfy you with all genuity to each article,—beseeching you to give credit thereunto, and, for the time to come, not so easily receive impressions to the prejudice of what light those may give, which make profession of honour and set an high price upon your friendship.—To the first I answer, that Captain Rose* only hath lost the goods of Monsieur Richard Saltonstall, making shipwreck upon the Isle of Sables, whereunto neither the deceased Monsieur, the commander of Razilly, then Lieutenant General for the King in all the extent of New France, nor myself did in any measure contribute, seeing that we were so far asunder and that the said Captain Rose, being through storm of wind by hazard put into the Harbour of La Heve, where then he was unacquainted, was kindly received and entertained by the said Sir, in the said place ; the ship being then returned to France, the year ensuing all his company were delivered unto him, and a thousand crowns, which he had in his coffer ; and for certain cables and sails, which he had saved of the wreck of his ship, the said Sir, the commander of Razilly, gave him, in payment, seven or eight hundred buttons of massive gold, which he caused to be taken off from one of his suits, drawing Bills upon me, who then was at Rochelle, to discharge the said sum, for which he had given them, which I accepted, and two days after, paid him his money. He did ill to make use of such kindness, shewed unto him, to colour over to his owners the losses, which he put them unto, (through his ill managing of their Estate). He thought hereby to excuse himself and to obtain yet another ship by their means. It is usual with such

* John Rose.

rude persons with like coin, to repay the assistances and kindnesses showed unto them in their sreights. To the second, I answer, that when the said deceased commander of Razilly came into this country, he had order by his commission to withdraw Port Royal out of the hand of the Scotts, and that by an article contained in the treaty of peace, made between the French and English after the taking of Rochelle. You have but little knowledge of the Letter, still drawn upon Mr. de Boulemaky for satisfaction of certain Indian corn, cattle and ordnance, which the said Scotts left with us. The like command, also, he had to clear the coast unto Pemaquid and Kenebeck of all persons whatever, and to cause them to withdraw, if there were any habitation seated on this side. It was myself, who received order to execute the total, and met with Thomas Willet placed at Pemptagoiett.* I prayed him to be gone, giving him to understand with as much civility as I could, that it was not a place for him to inhabit. He carried away what he could, and of what remained there was an inventory made; which he and I signed unto, and in the upshot I gave him a bill to make him payment upon demand. A month after, he came to the said place, with a ship and pinnace to fire ordnance upon them, who were there, without asking what was due unto him. I believe, if any had cause to complain, that, before all men, who were not interested herein, I should be received to make my grievances appear, having received a thousand detriments for the kind usage, which he received from me for having no right to place himself in that place. I did him no wrong to force him to depart,—seeing he possessed another's right. I asked a reason of this action of him, who then held the Government of your Commonwealth, who washed his hands of it, and wrote me, that he knew not of it, and, as for them, that they desired to continue alliance, and to maintain free commerce between the two nations; but matters were not cleared since I made him answer,—that, in good time, I should account it a glory favourably to receive those, who should avow themselves to be under his authority, and told him, that when they would come, they should be welcome to Penobscot, but no further. See, I beseech you, if, after the carriage of matters in this

* [Sometimes written Pentagoiett in these papers. It is called Pentagonett in Winthrop. It formerly signified Penobscot. *Pub. Com.*]

sort, either I ought or could have done otherwise. I think I have answered your third article by the end of this second, further, adding that all was to avoid the disorders, which formerly have fallen out until there might be further clearing of the intentions one of another. For the fourth, I might go for a senseless beast, if after all those arts of hostility, received from yours,— without giving them the least occasion myself or those whom I have left this winter to command in my absence in those places, if we should not have given the like commission. You are so well versed in warlike design, and understand so well points of State, and that which concerneth justice, as to judge therein ;—behold the truth in his brightness, as I have known it. Moreover, with your favour, I should crave answer to the articles, which Mr. Marie shall perpound unto you about those things, which do concern me ; but, above all, how you desire to act for the future towards the said Sir—de la Tour. For my part and all those which do belong unto me, you shall always find such readiness, as you can desire. If I can but obtain from you this request as to desist from fomenting the rebellion of the said Sir de la Tour, I engage any word from this hour by these, that whatever troubles may fall out, yea, between the two crowns of France and England (which I heartily pray God not to permit), to keep inviolably with you and those which are under your authority, that peace and intelligence, which are requisite in these beginnings. I shall end with this assurance, whereupon you may rest, that any interests shall never be considered by me when use may be made of my Master's and your rest ; for my Prince having commanded me to live with you as if nothing had been questionable, (provided that you hearken to reason), I shall keep it with the peril of a thousand lives, and promise you to forget what is past, if you afford me half that justice, which you would demand if you were in my place. I shall shut up all at this time, assuring you that if you think meet, I shall never be other than

Your most humble and most affectionate Servant,

AULNEY,

Governour and Lieutenant General for the King, in all the Coasts of Acadie, Country of New France.

From *Port Royal*, this 21*st Oct.*, 1644.

III.

[The subsequent letter is translated from a copy, taken in the French of nearly two centuries ago, by Secretary Willard, as denoted at the close. As the readers of it, in this age, cannot be acquainted with every particular circumstance, under which it was first composed, some parts of it do not appear completely lucid. *Pub. Com.*]

GENTLEMEN,

I could not know how to divest myself of the deep feelings, with which your kindness has filled me, nor to deprive myself of the confidence with which your generosity has furnished me, nor do I believe, that however my enemy may have gone to Boston to deceive you and make me pass for a traitor, you will condemn me without a hearing or abandon me because he would invade my interests. He is a man of artifice, and who, knowing that you esteem good men, will assume all the grimaces and similarities of piety, (but not in essence), who will strive to give you the impression, that you ought to abandon me, but he will not tell you that it is to fortify himself by my disaster and afterwards make you difficulty, as he has already shown by the injustice and perfidy, committed in the affair of Penobscot. He supposes, (so very vain is he), that your opinions will be swayed by his, and provided that he shows some decrees, you will give me up. But you have been too conversant with state matters not to be aware, that England answered to the complaints which the King of France made on the subject of England's importing into Spain all sorts of Merchandize ; that they did not pretend, because of an alliance with France, to deprive themselves of commercial advantages. And, moreover, that the King of England assisted the Hollanders with men, money and arms, notwithstanding the confederation of Spain. And the King of France protects the same Hollanders in a similar manner, for that, which the said King had with this Republic, was prior to that, which they have contracted with the King of Spain, and that, for the same reason, the late Queen of France, Marie de Medicis, regent during the minority of her son, and he, namely, Lewis XIII., lately deceased, protected the Republic of Geneva against the

arms of the Duke of Savoy, son in law of the Queen, and brother in law of the King. And, therefore, Gentlemen, your reason will not oblige you to leave me unprotected. I promise myself, that you will not allow it. For that which concerns his decrees, I could not better enable you to perceive the injustice of them, than to place in your hands that, which contains the crimes, that they impute to me. You will see them in this, as if I prevented by my bad deportment the progress of the service of God and of the King, and the advancement of the Colony. And when it is asked of them whether they are not his evil deeds, they say, instead of alledging the course of my vicious life, that I have done nothing in the country. But, mark the false testimony, which consists in not being able to prove, that I impede, by my vicious conduct, the progress of the service of God among the savages, and, instead of proving it, he goes to allege, that I have done nothing in the Country, which is an irrelavent point and still false. For, I have built two Forts, and he himself has burnt one of mine, and he has not built another for it, nor cleared up only seven or eight acres of land. He has also burnt the Monastery Church contrary to the tenor of the decree, which ordered him to put in those places men, who were able to answer for them, and, by consequence, to preserve them. And this wretch, to justify his Atheism, alledges, that the Indian females have been corrupted in the Church, which is as false, as it is true, that he burnt the wigwam of a Savage at Cape Sables, to carry off his wife from him. And that the commander de Razilly, his late master, held him a long time in prison for this cause. And that this last winter Father Vincent de Paris, a Capuchin, did all in his power to be heard against him in Council, to prove his Atheistical hypocrisy, showing, that for six months, he had criminal connexion in Port Royal with a woman, being a communicant, with this horrible crime, all the eight days. But, gentlemen, to prove his perfidy, consider only the capture of Penobscot and the payment of Thomas Ouillet* and you will see, at the same time, his destitution of faith and his rage against the English Nation. Whatever relates to myself, do not account me so unprincipled a man,

* Willet.

nor such an enemy as he, until I shall have as much deceived and offended you, as he has. But, especially, consider my inclinations by my obligations, and believe me, Gentlemen,

Your very humble,
affectionate Servant,
De la Tour.

At St. John's River
Fort, the 27 of Oct., 1644.

A true copy taken from the original now sent to Great Britain. Examined pr.

J. Willard, *Secretary.*

IV.

[The subsequent petition, having no date, seems to have been presented in 1644. *Pub. Com.*]

To the right worshipful, the Governour, Deputy Governour, the worshipful Assistants, with the Deputies, now assembled in a General Court in Boston,—these be presented as the humble petition of John Bayley and Isaac Barkeley. Whereas there was an account lately commenced against your Petitioners by Madam La Tour, alias Frances Mary Jaquelins, upon pretence of breach of a Charter Party, which Charter Party was fraudulent, and made only to be shown in case they should have met with the King's Ships, and your Petitioners being for the present not able to prove it, their witnesses being in England, they were condemned to pay her twenty hundred pounds sterling, and since that time, execution is granted, and seizure made on all the goods and Merchandise, which came in the ship Gilliflower to the great prejudice of Alderman Barkeley of London, Mr. Henry St. Johns, Merchant, and Captain John Bayley, owners of the said goods, your Petitioners, therefore, humbly request this honoured Court to grant them such convenient time for the review of this account as in which the testimony may be brought out of England for clearing the truth, and that, in the mean time, the goods may not be delivered in to the Custody of the said Lady or her agent, and one of your petitioners will remain here,

and the whole cargo of Goods, or good security for such part thereof, as shall be disposed of to the full value of the sum aforesaid, shall also be left in deposite until the time appointed for the review shall come, the Lady La Tour giving such security, as to your wisdoms shall seem fit to prosecute the action then and to pay such damages, as may then be given us from her for so molesting of us,—by granting of which request you will much engage the aforesaid Merchants in England, and oblige us ever to remain,

Your Worships'

Servants to command,

JNO. BAYLEY.

ISAAC BARKELEY.

V.

The Magistrates' answer to this petition is, that the court, that heard the cause never heard of any just ground as yet of a review, but only pretences of a ground. Yet seeing Madam La Tour hath made voluntarily these two proffers ;—1st, that she is content to put in good security for the whole cargo, or so much thereof, as she hath a judgment for (if she may have said goods delivered), to answer to a review within thirteen months ; or, 2dly, that if she may have delivered unto her five hundred pounds of the said goods, she giving security for the same, she will stay for the rest till the time aforesaid, so as the defendants put in good security to be responsible for so much, as make up the judgment of damages, if they reverse not the judgment within the time aforesaid. This offer of the Lady, the Magistrates do conceive, may give satisfaction to all ; yet if it should not be accepted, the defendants are at liberty to bring their review.

JNO. ENDECOTT, *Governour.*

VI.

Governour and Council's Letter to Mons. D'Aulney, from Salem.

SIR,

Upon the request, lately presented unto us by Sieur de la Tour, to yield him assistance of men and ammunition, against your forces, which he was in fear of, we have had

occasion tendered us seriously to consider how matters have passed between you and us, and among other things many injuries which sundry of our people and friends have, at several times, suffered from you and yours since your coming into these parts,—and, particularly, certain commissions lately given forth to Captain Le Boeuf* to take our vessel and goods, which might have given us occasion to have yielded unto the request of the said Sir—and to have sought for satisfaction in another way; but, upon consideration of the tender of friendship and the desire of the continuance of mutual correspondency between us, held forth in a letter, sent from yourself to John Winthrop, Esq., then being our Governor, which hath been shewed unto us, to the end, that you and all the world may know the delight, which we take to live in peace with all, (and as far as we can) to avoid all occasions of difference and contention, (highlier esteeming of peace than war, if upon just and equal terms we can obtain it);—we have taken this present opportunity to write unto you, that (if it may be), we may truly understand one another, that all occasions of wrong, offered or received (wheresoever they be) may righteously be removed, and for time to come, that rules of love and peace may carefully be attended to, and, in this way of the tender of love and peace, and removal of whatsoever may hinder it, we shall readily first walk in, although, we be ignorant of any wrong, which we or any of our people have at any time done; yet if there be any, which we have not the knowledge of, for which you have just cause to complain, we are prompt and ready to hear and redress the same; and, as for that which was done the last year by our people in the design, wherein they were employed by the said Sir de la Tour, that it may not be misconstrued, we do hereby in words of truth assure you, that they did not act either by command, counsel or permission of the Government here established, they went volunteers without any commission from it; and, as we are in part ignorant of what they did, so it was done without our advise, and for any unlawful action, which any amongst them might possibly commit, (if there be any) we do not approve of, and shall be facile and ready (in case it shall

* Frequently written Beuf by French authors.

appear) to our power so to demean ourselves, as due satisfaction shall be rendered unto you; for as we are not willing to bear injuries whilst we have in our hands to right ourselves, we ever desire to be conscientiously careful not to offer any ourselves nor to approve of it in any of ours. For the present, the particulars wherein we conceive ourselves, friends and confederates to be by you injured, and for the which we never yet received satisfaction, are ;—

First,—Your taking of the goods of Sir Richard Saltonstall, Knight, and the imprisoning of his men, who suffered ship wreck upon the Isle of Sables eight years past.

Second,—Your taking of Penobscot from those of our nation and league of Plymouth.

Third,—Your refusal of traffic with us at Port Royal, and threatening to take our Vessels, which should go beyond Pemptagoiett, and accordingly, your staying of one of our Vessels, though afterwards you released her.

Lastly; Your granting of Commissions to take our Vessels and Goods this last Autumn, as is above mentioned.

To the above said particulars, we desire and expect your clear and speedy answer, that so we may understand how you are at present disposed, whether to War or Peace,—and accordingly steer our course, as God shall direct, and, as for the present, we have not granted the said request of the said Sir De la Tour, but, on the contrary, upon this occasion, we have expressly prohibited all our people to exercise any act of hostility either by Sea or Land against you, unless it be in their own defence, until such time, as they shall have further commission. A copy of the present we have sent unto you, here enclosed. Also, upon the reception of these presents, we desire and expect, that all such commissions shall be without delay called in, which have been given forth by you or any of yours against us and our people, and, forasmuch as our merchants are entered into a way and form of commerce with said De la Tour, which firstly, they tendered to yourself, but according as we have been informed, you refused; nevertheless, we see not just reason (wherein we are cordial and candid) to hinder them in their just and lawful callings, nor to hinder their own defence, in case they shall be assaulted, either by you or yours, during their trade with the said Sir. We leave them to Divine Providence, and to the dictate of

their own conscience, to regulate them according to right reason in such a case. For the full expediting and accomplishing of our faithful and unfeigned desires of amity and peace for the time to come, and the removal of whatsoever might intervene, we have sent you those two, to return your answer and resolution about that, which is above, desiring the God of peace to guide us all in those paths which may reach it and rest,

Sir, etc.

VII.

Copy of a Letter sent from Monsieur Aulney to our Governour, by Mr. Hawthorne, filed 31*st August,* 1645.

Sir,

The honour of yours by Mr. Hawthorne hath fully confirmed to me the esteem, which Monsieur Marie gave me of your deserts, and after I had considered the face and drift of your reasons, I felt myself swayed so much the more willingly to receive satisfaction, because your courtesy and honesty are such, as would obtain the like from those, that are of the least sociable disposition. As for the first, you have just cause to say, that I cherish a true and perfect alliance; for if it were not true, and that there were any mixture of deceit, I pray you to believe, that I had rather perish in a good and just War, than to lead a life altogether unworthy of my breeding. Upon this occasion, I will candidly tell you, that Mr. Marie had assured me, that none of yours should undertake the affairs of Sir De la Tour until you had returned me an answer by the last resolution, to know whether you would be at peace or war with me, and in the mean while, I understood by Mr. Allen the last Autumn, that you were to convoy the wife of the said De la Tour, with three Ships into the river of St. John. I know not how you will name such kind of dealing. As for me, I should rather perish than to promise that, which I would not perform. To say, as Mr. Hawthorne, that they were Merchants of London, whom you cannot hinder from trading with whom they please, this were good, if we did not well know, that La Tour, being worth nothing, and altogether unknown to your said Merchants, they would never trust such persons,—if you

(or) other Gentlemen were not his security. Moreover, that persons who desire peace with their Neighbours, as you say you do, would have hindered such proceedings if they had pleased,—it being easily done in such places, as we are in. For the second, that you are not accustomed to meet until the month of September. That doth not concern me. I shall constantly wait until the said time, according to your desire, although Mr. Marie did believe that you would have answered me in the Spring, as he did apprehend you. Once more, I engage you my word, that I will not stir nor give any answer to my king in France, until I have yours, or that you make it appear, that you despise the amity of the French. For the third, that you did believe, that you had given satisfaction to the demand, which Mr. Marie made unto you on my behalf, by the answers given in writing by yourselves, which are the very same with those, which newly you sent me. If you call that satisfaction unto a Governour for the King, after sending with strength of arms even unto his port, without declaration of war, or giving any other reason than by lively force to kill his men, burn one mill, slay cattle and to carry away a Barque, laden with Peltry and other goods, to say that your English, who have done such acts of hostility, were not sent by you; pardon me, Sir, if you please, if I tell you this is the mocking of a Gentleman to render such answers. Consider a little the two letters, which then were written unto me by Mr. Winthrop, then your Governour, and Mr. Hawkins the commander of your English Ships, and the answers, which I then made. I send you the copies of all, and you will see, that the goodness of your Judgment will oblige you to acknowledge what I say. If you love not to say better than so to act in like case, it is to make use of tricks of sleight; for it is evident, that if you would meddle with that, which doth not concern you, at least, in justice, you were bound to give as much credit to the amicable, voluntary and true answers, which I returned unto you, as unto the falsehoods of the said Sir De la Tour, and his folks. But will you, that I tell you, that is not the winding up of the business. The truth is, you thought, by surprising me, to have swallowed me up without Justice or any reason on your part, but pretended and coloured over. Believe it, Sir, that if you had

come to the end of your designs, you have to do with a king, who would not so easily have let you digested the morsel, as you might be given to understand. The example of Quebeck and of the same Port Royal where I am,—taken by the English from the French in the time of a lawful War, and afterwards surrendered to the same French joining thereunto ;—what is past between the French and English in St. Christopher's Island is sufficient to assure you of this truth, if you will. It is true, that I shall die, but the kings of France die not, and their hands are always long enough to maintain their subjects in their right, in which part soever they be in. So much for the chief article. As for the rest, I will tell you, that if you desire so to accomplish them according as Mr. Marie hath presented them unto you, you will find them upon due consideration, so reasonable and not less necessary than the satisfaction, which I demand of you therein, for the maintaining of good and faithful peace. Furthermore, Sir, I know not whether this honest man, who delivered me yours, did well understand the apprehensions of your Assembly, whereunto he hath told me he did assist ; but his reasons are very weak—to make believe, that Sir De la Tour had any appearance of Justice by saying, that one might have such arrests for twenty crowns in France, as Mr. Marie left the original with yourself. So to speak is to testify slender understanding in affairs. This makes me believe, that neither yourselves nor your Gentlemen of the Magistracy have such apprehensions. I pursuade myself you should have taken sounder advice, and that you should have taken a surer course and more reasonable not to have been deceived, which were to have sent the said arrests into England, that you might have tried the truth of them. I should have been very glad, and that those to whom you had sent them, had caused them to be presented to Monsieur Sabran, Embassador extraordinary for our King in England. You should have been fully satisfied and then you would have known, that I am a man of truth and without fraud in my proceedings. Mr. Marie hath told me, that he informed you, that the said Embassador had charge from his Majesty to speak unto your Sirs of the Parliament of England, concerning the differences, which are between you and us. I beseech you not to for-

get to send me the said arrests when you shall vouchsafe me the honor to send a man expressly to treat about and conclude of a league, and believe, Sir, that while I live, I shall cherish the occasion, that I may testify how much I desire to be,

Your more affectionate,
and more humble Servant,
AULNEY,
Governour and Lieut. General for the King in the Coast of the Acadie, Country of New France.

From Port Royal, the last of March, 1645.

VIII.

To the Honoured Governour, Deputy Governour, Magistrates, and Deputies of the General Court.

The humble petition of Stephen Winthrop, and Joseph Weld, Sheweth ;—

That whereas your petitioners, being in England about their occasions, were by Alderman Barkley arrested in 4500 pounds action, wherein he laid no personal cause against your petitioners, but only to recover thereby his damages for the goods, which were by Judgment of Court attached for Mr. De la Tour, the which suit he presented, not only in the Admiralty, but, also, in the Parliament, and when your petitioners were coming thence, he preferred a Bill in Chancery, and there obtained a *Ne exeat regno*, whereupon your petitioners were again arrested upon the Exchange to your discredit and damage, and were forced again to put in security of able Merchants for 4000 pounds more, to redeem their persons from Prison. The prosecution to answer and defend these actions, took up their time from their other occasions to their very great distruction, besides the great charges your petitioners were put to for the defence of the said suits, and after your petitioners' credit was much impaired thereby, because many feared our estates would be weakened by maintaining suit against so potent an adversary, and in damage to be utterly ruinated, if by any means he should obtain Judgment

against us. In tender consideration hereof, and for prevention of the utter ruin of your petitioners, their Wives and Families in defending this suit, which wholly concerns the maintaining of the just proceedings of the court,—this General Court will be pleased to take it into consideration, how your petitioners may be secured for the future, and repaid their charges already disbursed, and the rather for that your petitioners are upon their occasions shortly bound to repair thither again, and they shall pray, &c.

JOSEPH WELD,
STEPHEN WINTHROP.

The Magistrates know no way to help the Petitioners, but to certify the truth of the proceedings of the Court between Madam La Tour, Bailey, and Barkley, which they are ready to do and to leave them to take their lawful remedy against Alderman Barkley.

THOMAS DUDLEY, *Governour.*

Consented to by the Deputies.

EDWARD RAWSON.

Captain William Hawthorne being thought a meet person to go to Monsieur D'Aulney, is accordingly chosen by the house of Deputies, who desired our honoured Magistrates' consent thereto.

EDWARD RAWSON.

The Magistrates desire the Deputies to make choice of Captain Bridges or Major Denison to go to Mr. D'Aulney about this business, and the Magistrates will consent to either of them.

THOMAS DUDLEY, *Governour.*

The house of Deputies consent with our honoured Magistrates' choice, that Capt. Bridges to be sent to Monsieur D'Aulney.

EDWARD RAWSON.

IX.

The two papers sent herewith were drawn up to the end, that the state of the case, concerning Monsieur La Tour, may be represented with such relations, by which this Colony may be concerned in it, which the Magistrates desire the Deputies to take into serious and speedy consideration, so as (if they shall concur with us herein), they may be forthwith sent to the Elders for their further advice.—4, 16, 1645.

JOHN WINTHROP, *Deputy Governour.*

The Deputies conceive that but few of the Elders meet at Cambridge this week, besides Mr. Allen being not yet returned, our main business being the making of laws and many other businesses now in transaction in Court, they judge it not convenient to take this business into consideration at present.

ROBERT BRIDGES.

Mr. Allen being now returned and the Elders assembled, the Magistrates think meet the whole case should be sent to the Elders and desire the Deputies to consent thereto.

THOMAS DUDLEY, *Governour.*

We assent, that the two papers be sent to the Elders, if this may be sent, also, that we conceive the whole case is not contained in either of them, but do desire of them, that they will return us their thoughts according as they shall find.

ROBERT BRIDGES.

The Magistrates desire the Deputies to make up the whole case, that it may be sent to the Elders, otherwise they think it will be to little purpose to trouble them with it.

THOMAS DUDLEY, *Governour.*

The house of Deputies conceive the case cannot be stated in one day, and, therefore, desire, that there may be

commissioners appointed by the Court, and Commission granted them to examine witnesses thereabouts and prepare the same against the next session of a General Court, and they have nominated our honoured Governour and Lieutenant Atherton, Mr. Pelham and Captain Cook, Mr. Saltonstall and Mr. Hawthorne, who hereby have power to summon witnesses in their several shires, and a part to examine them and search out the truth of the case, as they shall see cause.

EDWARD RAWSON.

The magistrates consent to what the Deputies desire, touching the substance thereof, but do forbear to consent, that the Magistrates should take commission to take Oaths, but think it meet they should practice as they have done hitherto till it be ordered otherwise; also, they desire that the Deputies would presently send up five or six, whom they think most meet to confer with the Magistrates about a matter, which concerns the good of us all, which requires expedition.

THOMAS DUDLEY, *Governour.*

X.

[The ensuing letter was originally written in Latin. Supposing that a translation of it, more literal than free, would better convey the meaning of its author, we here present it in English accordingly.—*Pub. Com.*]

Most meritorious and equitable President. The delegate of yourself and of your confederates, Mr. Robert Bridges, I have received, as I could, with a pleasant and cheerful disposition, especially without delay, as I understood, that he had so come, that he might treat with us about peace and tranquility, which is of great importance among the French and English inhabitants of these Colonies. But when I read your letters and heard your Mr. Bridges, plainly did I perceive, that you were not yet disposed for a firm and stable peace; but only to ask something, in the meanwhile, until (as you say) there may be opportunity to satisfy my just complaints, thus far described .to you by Mr. Marie, my dear and confidential messenger, to whom I gave all the power, I had, for treat-

ing with you, when I sent him to you, because, surely, if you had granted the same power to your delegate, there is no doubt but that by this course, peace would have been confirmed between us. But I pray, that you will permit me to open my mind, that I may speak sincerely. It seems to me, unless I am deceived, that it is your desire to defer from year to year, even while you can elude the just satisfaction, which I seek from you. Therefore, I close with you in one word, namely, that you may declare to me sincerely and without any equivocation, the first of the Spring and no longer, (because I shall expect so much as this), whether you will give satisfaction or not, as I have ingenuously signified to your delegate, Mr. Bridges. In the mean while, I engage to you, that I will commit no aggression against you until I shall have your consent or negative; nor, moreover, can you be ignorant as to the justice of my petition, since sufficiently thus far it has been made known to you as well by my Mr. Marie, as through the injuries of Mr. Hockin and his people; nor yet does it weary me to instruct your delegate, Mr. Bridges, again about the same things, that I may comply with your wish, and that you may better discern me desirous not only altogether for peace and common tranquility between us, but, also, to be the friend of you all and of you in particular.

Most deserving and equitable
Governour, or President,
* Sincerely your humble servant,
——— AULNEY,

Governour Lt. General for the King, in the Coast of Acadie, country of New France.

Dated at Fort St. John,
Nov. 3, 1645.

[The superscription of this letter was as follows: Mr. Winthrop, most

* [This phrase as far as Aulney, in the original, is "Demitum fore usque ad aras." If demitum be instead of demissum,—as it probably is, and construed "humbly minded," according to Cicero de Orat. 2; and fore signify to be;—and usque ad aras may be rendered "as far as conscience permit,"—according to Gellius; we suppose that the phrase may be properly expressed as it is above. Even if demitum be defined,—sent from,—and fore be called,—door,—the collective idea would not be essentially different. It is not unlikely, that Aulney used these Latin words in connexion with each other,—as a modus loquendi,—common in his day: but the classic rendering of which we have not been so favored as to find. *Pub. Com.*]

worthy and most equitable President of the Confederate† Convention of New England. In Boston—Marked, per Capt. Bridges.]

XI.

Commission of the French King to D'Aulney, Feb. 1647.

Louis, by the Grace of God, King of France and Navarre, to all People present and to come—*Greeting:*

Being well informed and assured of the laudable and commendable affection, trouble and diligence, that our dear and well beloved Charles de Menou, Knight, Lord D'Aulney Charnizay, appointed by the late King of blessed memory, our most honoured Lord and Father (whom God absolve), Governour and our Lieutenant General in the Country and Coast of L'Acadie in New France, hath used both to the conversion of the Savages in the said Country to the Christian Religion and Faith; and the establishing of our authority in all the extent of the said Country, having built a Seminary under the direction of a good number of Capuchin Friars for the instruction of the said Savages' children, and, by his care and courage, driven the foreign Protestants out of the Pentagoiett Fort, which they had seized to the prejudice of the rights and authority of our Crown, and by our express commandment taken again by force of Arms and put again under our power the Fort of the River St. John, which Charles of St. Etienne, Lord De la Tour, was possessed of, and, by open rebellion, endeavoured to keep against our will and to the great contempt of the declarations of our Council by the help and countenance of Foreign Protestants, with whom he had made a confederacy for that purpose, and that, moreover, the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay hath happily begun to form and settle a French Colony in the said Country, cleared and improved great parcels of land, and, for the defence and conservation of the said Country, under our authority and power, built and strenuously kept against the endeavour and assaults of the said Foreign Protestants, four Forts in the most necessary places, and furnished them with a sufficient number of Soldiers, sixty great Guns

† United Colonies.

and other things requisite to that,—all with great and immense charges, the which to bear, he hath been forced to borrow of several persons great sums of money, we not having been able to give him all the assistance in that occasion, that we had given, if the necessity of our affairs had permitted us,—make known, that we desire, with all our heart, for the glory of God, the increasing of the Christian Faith and Religion, the salvation of these poor Savages' souls, who live in ignorance, without any Religion and knowledge of our Maker, as, also, for the honour and greatness of our crown,—that so pious and honourable a work be carried on and finished as perfectly as possible, fully trusting in, and assured of the zeal, care, industry, courage, good and wise behaviour of the said D'Aulney Charnizay, and being willing as it is but reasonable to reward his good and faithful services,—have, by the advice of the Queen Regent, our most honoured Lady and Mother, and with certain knowledge, full power and Royal authority, the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay, confirmed and do confirm anew as much as need is, or might be, and have appointed and do appoint, by these presents, signed by our own hand, Governour and our Lieutenant General, representing our Person in all the above said Countries, Territories, Coasts, and bounds of L'Acadie, beginning from the brink of the great River St. Lawrence, both along the Sea Coast and adjacent Islands and inner part of the main land, and in that extent, as much and as far as can be, as far as the Virginias,* to settle and make known our name, power and authority, and submit to it the People that dwell there, to bring them and cause them to be instructed in the knowledge of the true God and light of the Christian Religion and Faith, and command there upon the sea as well as upon the land, to order and put in execution, all that he knoweth that can and ought to be done for the maintaining and keeping the said places under our authority and power, with power to appoint and settle all officers, both civil and military, for the first time and afterwards, name them to us and present them for our confirmation, and to give them our Letters to that necessary; and, according to the occurrences of affairs, with the advice and

* A Word formerly used to denote New England as well as more Southern Colonies.

counsel of the wisest and ablest persons, make laws, statutes, and ordinances confirm to ours as much as it is possible; make peace and alliance and confederacy with the said people, their Princes and others, having power and commandment over them, to make open war against them, to establish and maintain our authority and the freedom of trade and commerce between our subjects and them, and, in other cases, as he will think fit to grant our said subjects, who may live and trade in the said country and to the natives thereof, privileges, places and dignities, according to the qualities and merits of persons, all under our good pleasure. We do will that the said D'Aulney Charnizay may, and we give him power to keep and appropriate to himself what he will think most convenient and proper to his settlement and use of the said countries and places, and to distribute such parts thereof, as he pleaseth, both to our said subjects, that will settle there, and to the natives, and to grant them such titles, honours, rights, powers and faculties, as he will think fit according to the qualities, merits, and services of Persons; to cause the mines of gold, silver, copper and other metals and minerals to be carefully sought after and to put them in use as it is prescribed by our declaration. We reserve only the tenth part to ourselves of the profit arising of the gold, silver and copper ores, and leave to him what might belong to us as to the other metals and minerals, to help him to bear the other expences of his Government. We do grant to the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay, leave to build towns, forts, harbours, and other places, that he thinketh to be useful for the abovementioned purposes, and there to set such Officers and Garrisons, as need shall be, and generally to do for the settlement, habitation, and conservation of the said countries, lands, and coasts of L'Acadie from the said River St. Lawrence as far as the Virginias, their appurtenances and dependencies under our name and authority all, that we could do ourselves, if we were there in person, giving him to that end all power and authority and special commission by these presents. And for as much that the only way, that he hath hitherto had and hath now and may for the time to come, to bear part of the great charges, that he hath been and is still at, the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay for the keeping both of the said four Forts and Garri-

sons there, and the Colony that is forming there, and the Friars and Seminary abovesaid, all which things are maintained and do subsist at his own charge and cost, no body else having contributed to it any thing,—is the trade and traffic of furs with the said savages, without which he could not maintain himself, and would be fain to leave and abandon all to the prejudice of God's honour and our crown's and the savages' souls, who have already embraced Christianity, we have graciously given and granted the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay exclusively of all others, and, by these presents, do give and grant in confirming his actual possession of the same, the privilege, power and faculty to traffic and trade in furs with the said savages throughout the said country of main land and coast of L'Acadie from the River St. Lawrence to the sea, and as far as the said countries and coasts may be extended to the Virginias, to possess it as well as the lands, gold, silver, and copper mines and other metals and minerals and all other things, above mentioned, himself, his heirs and assigns, and make homage of them to us either in person or by an attorney, considering the distance of the places and the danger, by reason of his absence to cause the said trade of furs to be managed by those, he will appoint and give power to do it. We do expressly forbid all merchants, masters and captains of ships and others, our subjects, and the natives of the said country of whatsoever condition and quality they be, to trade in the said furs with the said Indians without his special leave and permission—on pain of disobedience and entire confiscation of their vessels, victuals, arms, munition, and goods for the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay, and thirty thousand livres of fine. We do permit the Lord D'Aulney Charnizay to hinder them by all means, to stop the offenders, their vessels, arms and victuals, in order to deliver them into the hand of justice, to be proceeded against, the persons and goods of the said offenders and in order that our intention and will be known, and nobody may plead ignorance, we command all our justices and officers, every one in his place, that, at the request of the said Lord D'Aulney Charnizay, they shall cause these presents to be read, published, and registered, and what is contained in them to be kept and observed, punctually causing to be posted up the contents thereof in

the sea-ports, havens, and other places of our kingdom—lands and countries of our Dominions, where need shall be, willing that credit be given to the copies well collated by one of our beloved and faithful Councellors and Secretaries or Notary Royal, required to do it as to the present original, for much is our pleasure; in witness whereof we have caused our seal to be set to these presents—given at Paris in the month of February in the year of grace, one thousand six hundred and forty-seven, and the fourth of our reign. Signed

LOUIS.

By the King, the Queen Regent his mother being present. DE LOMENIE.

XII.

SIRS,

After I understood the death of my son, Monsieur D'Aulney, the late Governour and Lieutenant to my sovereign Lord, the King, within all the country and coast of Acadie in New France,—and that, in the issue, many of the chief Lords of the crown, my kinsmen, had chosen me tutor over the children of my deceased son, proprietary of the said country, the king honoured me with the government of all the said country until such time of my deceased son's eldest son should be of age, to take upon him the execution of the said trust, and in as much, Sirs, as I am not ignorant of the amity, which you bear to my said deceased son in embracing his interest, as soon as he made that esteem appear, which the king had of him by the grant, which his Majesty gave unto him of the said country, I have ever since desired, with great care, to maintain the same good intelligence with you; yea, and better than my deceased son did. If I possibly could, therefore, it is that I wrote unto my daughter in law by Monsieur De Saint Mas, a gentleman of honour and quality, whom the King thought meet I should send thither in quality of my Lieutenant General, that immediately upon his arrival, she should send towards you to convey this letter and to renew with you a good and perfect alliance, friendship and confederation, with protestation, that it shall not be violated in any of those things, which should be kept between good

friends allianced and neighbours. It is the affectionate prayer, which I make unto you, Sirs;—and believe, that in all places and upon every occasion, wherein I may do you service, I shall as cordially perform it, as I am truly, Sirs,

Your very humble,
and most affectionate Servant,
CHARNIZAY.

From Paris, 2d of March, 1651.

XIII.

At a council held at Boston 10th, 4th Month, 1651. Monsieur Belile* coming from Port Royal, brought three letters from Madam D'Aulney, Monsieur De Saint Mas, and Monsieur Charnizay.—To Madam D'Aulney's letter, which was as followeth,—superscribed to the Gentlemen, Governour and Magistrates of New England at Boston.

SIRS,

God having, somewhat above a year since, as you may have understood, disposed of by death Monsieur D'Aulney of happy memory, my most honoured lord and husband, I was left under uncomfortable displeasure, and saw no means in the world to mitigate my grief in such a troublesome state; but the King, out of his bounty, casting his eyes upon my family, was pleased to consider me and my children in the person of Monsieur De Charnizay, father of the deceased Monsieur D'Aulney, and to gratify us with his letters patents of confirmation in the propriety and government of all the Acadie and Islands adjacent, to this purpose, promising us his royal protection and the succour of his power as already it doth appear by the notable assistance of victuals and men, which are come unto us, under the conduct of Sieur De Saint Mas, our Lieutenant. And, I believe, Sirs, that, as you, under the relation of good neighbours and allianced, would have taken part with me in my desolation, it was just, I should give you to understand the favours, which I received from God and his

* [Contraction for Bell' Ile: as applied to one of the Foucquets by Dictionnaire Historique par Chaudon et Delandine,—it is Belle-Ile. *Pub. Com.*]

Majesty, and this is the only occasion of this present and of the message, which I send unto you by Sieur De Belile, a man of quality and desert, in whom I do confide, who will assure you of the good intentions, which I have to do you service, and of my purpose to maintain that good intelligence, which was between us in the time of Monsieur D'Aulney. Thus, praying God to preserve you, I rest, Sirs,

Your most affectionate
and good friend,
JANE MOTIN,
Widow of the deceased Monsieur D'Aulney.

From Port Royal this 27 *May*, 1651.

XIV.

SIR,

By the letters, herewith joined, from my Lord De Charnizay and from Madam D'Aulney, it will be facile for you to understand the sincerity of their actions, as, also, more easy to conceive, that there will be no stick from any but yourselves, that we may maintain a faithful and perfect correspondence, the honour, which I have to command in this country, on the behalf of the King, my master, in quality of Lieutenant General unto my said Lord Charnizay, furnisheth me with power thus to write unto you and to assure you of my friendship, if it be acceptable unto you, in expectation of news from you, I rest, Sirs,

Your most affectionate Servant,
DE SAINT MAS.

At the Castle of Port Royal, the 29*th May*, 1651.

XV.

Council's Letter to Mons. Charnizay.

SIR,

We received yours from Paris, dated the 2*d of March*, 1651,—by which we perceive the King of France hath invested you with power, as his Lieutenant, to govern in all the country and coast of New Acadie in New France,

in the behalf of the son of the late Lieutenant Monsieur D'Aulney and therein, also, an intimation of your desire of a continuance of all faithful, neighbourly correspondency with us, which we have been forward to embrace and keep with all men, as we take ourselves in duty bound, and, unless ought shall proceed from such, as yourself hath impowered to govern in that place or from the People thereof towards us contrary thereunto, we shall still hold and maintain the same, and in the mean time remain, Sir,

Your humble Servant,

JOHN ENDECOTT, *Governour.*

By consent of all the Magistrates.

Boston 14*th*, 4*th Month*, 1651.

XVI.

Council's Letter to Madam D'Aulney.

MADAM,

We received yours—dated 27 *May*, 1651, in which you intimated your ready inclination to hold a continued, firm, neighbourly correspondency with us, as usually is between good friends, which hath been always grateful to us to entertain with all men, as much as in us lieth, nor do we know or intend any thing but all neighbourly, loving and friendly compliance with you, unless ought shall proceed from yourselves towards us contrary thereto, and, in the mean-time, subscribe ourselves, Madam,

Your humble Servant,

JOHN ENDECOTT, *Governour.*

With consent of all the Magistrates.

Boston 12*th*, 4*th Month*, 1651.

XVII.

Council's Letter to Mons. St. Mas.

SIR,

We received yours dated 27*th May*, 1651, in which you intimate your readiness respecting the place, over which you govern by power derived to you from Monsieur Char-

nizay to maintain a sincere and friendly correspondency with us, as usually is between good friends, which is always acceptable to us to entertain with all men, as much as in us lieth, nor do we know or intend anything, but all loving neighbourly and friendly compliance with you, unless ought shall proceed from yourselves towards us contrary thereto, and in the meantime subscribe ourselves, Sir,

Your humble servant,

JOHN ENDECOTT, *Governour.*

By consent of all the Magistrates. Delivered to Monsieur Belile the same day.

Boston 12*th*, 4*th Month*, 1651.

XVIII.

Monsieur De La Tour oweth—*May* 13:

To balance of account then drawn up between us, as by the mortgage appeareth	£2084,00,00.
Nov. 19.—To goods shipped in the vessel he went to Canada in, ...	216,08,08.
1654–24–8. To interest upon the preceding sums due to me 9 years, 5 months, at £8 pr. £100, ...	1723,14,06.
To charge of demanding payment, twice	40,00,00.
To what is due to my assignees, . . .	82,05,00.
2084,00,00.	
216,08,08.	
1723,14,06.	
122,05,00.	
Sum, £4146,08,02. whole amount,	£4146,08,02.
Per Contra: Ought to have pr. 164 3-4 pounds of Beaver received from Monsieur Prevost at 10s. pr. lb., ...	£82,07,06.
24, (8) pr. Balance of this account as appeareth, ...	4064,00,08.
whole sum,	£4146,08,02.

This is to testify before whom it may concern, that upon the Letter of Attorney vouchsafed unto me by Major General Edward Gibbons.—I made two voyages, once to St. John's River, and another time to Port Royal, to demand of Monsieur De La Tour, both the money due from him to the said Major Gibbons upon Mortgage, and also for a parcel of goods shipped for him upon the Vessel he went to Canada in. The charge of which two voyages amounted to above forty pounds. Furthermore, that the said De La Tour is indebted more to assignees of the said Major Gibbons, for goods, then delivered unto himself and order, eighty-two pounds five shillings. Witness my hand, made at Boston, this 25*th* (8) *ber.*, 1654.

JOSHUA SCOTTOW.

Sworn before the Court.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

This is to testify before whom it may concern, that the Mortgage of Monsieur De La Tour's fort, &c. was by himself signed and delivered by him, the said De La Tour, unto Major Edward Gibbons, in presence of us and divers others and the testimony, which therein we do bear, we do by these presents confirm, and, in case of need, shall further testify, if called therunto. Witness our hands made at Boston, this 25*th* (8) *ber.*, 1654. This is testified upon oath by Mr. Valentine Hill and Joshua Scottow, before the Magistrates, assembled in General Court.

JOHN ENDECOTT, *Deputy Governour.*

I, Samuel Maverick do hereby testify, that in Anno 1645, there was shipped aboard the Barque Planter by Major General Gibbons, several parcels of goods, all valued at two hundred and sixteen pounds, eight shillings and eight pence, and committed to the charge and disposal of Monsieur La Tour, of which, as also of a greater sum, adventured by myself with the said La Tour in that voyage, we never had to this day any return made. Witness my hand this 28*th day of October*, 1654.

SAMUEL MAVERICK.

Sworn before the Court.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

XIX.

Letter from Mr. Thomas Lake, in Boston, to Captain John Leverett, Merchant in London. Dated Sept. 2, 1657.

EXTRACT.

"The 29th of August, Mr. Scottow tendered £210 for Monsieur La Tour, and demanded two original Deeds, which he said are by contract to be delivered upon payment of the £210, and would not pay anything without the receipt of the Deeds. Now I shall inform Captain Breaden fully, of the whole action; and Mr. Usher, when he comes, will inform you, so as at present I shall not trouble you further with."

"How matters are at the Fort, I suppose Captain Breaden will inform. Col. Temple saith he is resolved to comply with Col. Crowne on some terms, to have his interest. Col. Temple was honourably received ashore by the Governour and Company's soldiers. He hath a noble spirit, answering what you wrote of him in Mr. Brown's letter, to whose house he went at Sudbury. I fear his noble spirit will not suit with Acadie, or at least the profit of Acadie will not maintain his post. Myself and some other friends, have spoken seriously to him for a frugal management of the same. He accepts of advice and saith he will by degrees clear himself of the unnecessary charge, which he is at by many servants, that he brought over, who will be as drones to eat up all the honey, that others labour for, and that he will have but two at most, to wait upon himself."

XX.

The deputies understanding by good information, that Captain John Allen hath several times been employed by order from this Court, viz., ten days to look after a French ship upon the coast, as also a voyage to Monsieur D'Aulney, both himself and ship, for the space of near twenty

days, besides a second voyage to the aforesaid D'Aulney, wherein he was absent six weeks; to which may be added, his lending Mr. Winslow for the Country's use, £100 in England, which was not paid in seven years after, and then but in Country pay, all which considered, the Deputies' judge meet, as a manifestation of their acceptance of such his good service, which hitherto hath not been taken notice of, so as to render him any answerable recompense, to grant him a thousand acres of land where he can find it according to law, so as he take it not up in above two places. Desiring the consent of our honoured Magistrates hereto.

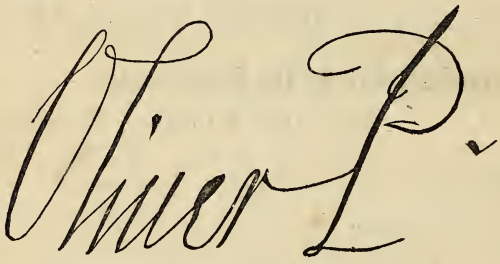
WILLIAM TORREY, *Clerk.*

27 (8) 1668, consented to by the Magistrates.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

HIS HIGHNESS THE LORD PROTECTOR'S ORDER.

To Captaine JOHN LEVERETT, *Commander of the Forts, lately taken from the French in America.**



WE have received an Account from Major Sedgwick, of his taking several Forts from the French in America, and that hee hath left you to Command and secure them for Us and this Commonwealth: and although WEE make no doubt of your fidelitie and diligence in performance of your trust, yet WEE have thought it necessarie to let you know of how great consequence it is, that you use your utmost care and circumspection, as well to defend and keep the Forts above said, as also to improve the regayning of them into Our hands, to the advantage of Us and this State, by such wayes and meanes as you shall judge conducible thereunto. And as WEE shall understand from you the state and condition of those places, WEE shall from tyme to tyme give such directions, as shall be necessarie.

Given at Whitehall, this third of Aprill, 1655.

* [As this is printed from the original, we give an engraved copy of the autograph of the Protector.]

I.

[As the excerpta of what remains after the full gleanings of Hutchinson and Stiles,—the subsequent items, relative to Whalley and Goffe,—are here presented.—*Pub. Com.*]

Governour of New England, to apprehend Whalley and Goffe.

To our trusty and well-beloved the present Governour, or other Magistrate or Magistrates of our Plantation of New England.

CHARLES R.

Trusty and well-beloved,—Wee greete you well. Wee being given to understand that Colonell Whalley and Colonell Goffe, who stand here convicted for the execrable murther of our Royall Father, of glorious memory, are lately arrived at New England, where they hope to shroud themselves securely from the justice of our lawes;—Our will and pleasure is, and we do hereby expressly require and command you forthwith upon the receipt of these our letters, to cause both the said persons to be apprehended, and with the first opportunity sent over hither under a strict care, to receive according to their demerits. We are confident of your readiness and diligence to perform your duty; and so bid you farewell.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, the fifth day of March, 1660–1.

By his Majesty's command,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

That this is a true copie of his Majesty's original letter, as it came and was presented to the Governour of the Massachusetts' jurisdiction, and was subscribed as on the other side, being compared therewith.

Attests,

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

Boston, May 6, 1661.

JNO. ENDECOTT, *Governour.*

II.

Order to search for Whalley and Goffe.

May 17, 1661. For the Marshall or Deputies at Milford.

You are to make diligent search, by the first, throughout the whole towne of Millfoord, and the precincts thereof, taking with you two or three sufficient persons, and calling in any other helpe you shall see need of, who are hereby required to attend for your assistance upon call; and this to be in all dwelling houses, barnes or other buildings whatsoever, and vessels in the harbour, for the finding and apprehending of Colonell Whalley and Colonell Goffe, who stand charged with crimes, as by his Majestie's letter appears; and being found, you are to bring them to the Deputie Governour, or some other Magistrate, to be sent over for England, according to his Majestie's order.

Hereof faile not at peril.

By order of the General Court,
as Attest,
William Leete, *Deputie Governour.*

Jasper Crane,
Matthew Gilberte,
Robert Treatt.

In the Marshall's absence, I doe appoint and impower you, Thomas Sanford, Nicholas Campe, and James Tapping to the above named powers, according to the tenour of the Warrant; and to make a returne thereof, under your hands to me, by the first.

Robert Treatt.

Wee, the said persons, appointed to serve and search, by virtue of this our Warrant, doe hereby declare and testifie that to our best light, we have the 20th of May, 1661, made diligent search according to the tenour of this warrant.

As witness our hands,

Thomas Sannford,
Nicholas Campe,
James Tapping,
Lawrence Ward, *his* I *mark,*

} *Searchers.*

III.

General Court Records.

June 10, 1661.—Report of Committee to the General Court.

"We further judge, that the warrant and letter from the King's Majestie for the apprehending of Colonell Walley and Colonell Goffe ought to be diligently and faithfully executed by the authority of this Court. And also that the General Court may doe safely to declare, that, in case (for the future) any legally obnoxious and flying from the civil justice of the State of England, shall come over to these partes, they may not heer expect shelter."

This, as well as other partes of the said Report—was approved by the Court.

IV.

"This Court do order that the Councill may dispose of 1000 acres of land in any place, not formerly graunted by this Court for the gratuity of such as have or may further be imployed by the authority of this Country; any other law or costome to the contrary notwithstanding.

The Magistrates haue past this with reference to the consent of theire brethren, the Deputies hereto.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

19 *June*, 1661.

The Deputyes consent hereto, provided it hinder not a plantation.

WILLIAM TORREY, *Clerk.*

Consented to by the Magistrates.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*"

V.

1661, *June* 19.—General Court, being on the point of adjourning, pass the subsequent vote. "If in this vacancy any opertunity present to write for England, the Gouernour is desired by the first conueyance to certify his Majesty or the Secretaries of State, what himselfe and the

Councill haue acted touching serching for Colonell Whalley and Colonell Goffe, in the prosecution of his Majesty's warrant."

VI.

"At a Councill held at Boston, in New England, *4th July*, 1661. Whereas the General Court by theire order, bearing date the *19th* of *June*, 1661,—did give and graunt a thousand acres of land to be at the Councill's disposall, for the gratuity of such as have or may be further imployed by the authority of this Country. The Councill considering the service of Mr. Thomas Kellond and Mr. Thomas Kirke,* performed in goinge to Connecticutt, New Hauen and Monhatoes in order to his Majesty's service for searchinge after Col. Whalley and Goffe, and judgeth it meete to giue and graunt to each of the sayd gentlemen, Mr. Kellond and Mr. Kirke, two hundred and fifty acres of land for a farme in any place, not formerly graunted, as a small recompense for theire paynes therein.

By order of the Councill.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

VII.

1662.—*June* 28. *From his Majesty's Letter to the Authorities of Massachusetts.*

After declaring his forgiveness to all who had rebelled against him in the late difficulties of his kingdom,—he says, "excepting only such persons who stand attainted by our Parliament here of high treason; if any such persons haue transplanted themselves into those parts, the apprehending and the transporting into this kingdome and delivering them into the hands of justice, we doe expect from the duty, affection and obedience of our good subjects of that our Colony, if they are found within the limits and jurisdiction thereof."

* [These were two young merchants, who came from England with a Royal Commission,—for the express purpose of searching out and apprehending Whalley and Goffe. They are fully spoken of in Hutchinson's Massachusetts, and in Stiles' Judges.—*Pub. Com.*]

VIII.

[The following extract affords a specimen of the wild reports, circulated in London to injure the credit of New England,—already the object of much suspicion and aversion with the supporters of Charles II.,—because they had not withstood the Cromwell administrations. It is from a letter of Col. Temple,—written from that metropolis to the Massachusetts authorities,—respecting the policy and disposition of the Court at St. James; March 4, 1662–3. *Pub. Com.*]

It says, relative to the slanderers of this Country,—

"The Lord Say declared them rogues, and told one of them publickly at the Councill, that he belyed the Country;—he knew that New England men were of another principle, when it was vrged, that Whalley and Goffe were in the head of an army in New England."

IX.

Instruction given to his Majestie's Commissioners—Richard Nichols, Robert Carr, George Cartwright, and Samuel Maverick.

April 25, 1664. "You shall make due inquiry whether any persons, who stand attainted here in Parliament of high treason, haue transported themselues thither; and doe now inhabit or reside or are sheltered there, and if any such persons are there, you shall cause them to be apprehended and to be put on ship board and sent hither, to the end that they may be proceeded with according to lawe; and you shall likewise examine, whether any such persons haue been enterteyned and received there since our returne into England, and what is become of them, and by whom they were received and enterteyned there, to the end, and for no other (for wee shall not suffer the act of indemnity to be in any degree violated), that those persons may be taken the more notice of, and may hold themselves to take the more care for their future behaviour."

[This instruction, having been presented among others, by the King's Commissioners, to the General Court,—received the reply of the latter body, in 1665,—as contained in our Collections, VIII. Vol. 2s. pp. 67, 68.—*Pub. Com.*]

X.

The deposition of John Coney, aged fourty and five years, or there abouts,—testifieth and sayeth, That being in Company with Mr. Thomas Kirk and Mr. Thomas Kellond at severall times, have heard them discourse about land that the General Court gave them about looking after Goffe and Whalley; and did positively heare the said Kirk and Kellond, before their going to sea,—say the longest liver should have both parts of the said land graunted, and that John Bushnell, if in being, could testify the same, which was then present at severall times. And further sayeth not.

Taken upon oath 12th of the third mo., 1670.

Before mee,

ANTHONY STODDARD, *Commiss.*

Boston, 12th May, 1670.

XI.

[Among the objections, exhibited against Massachusetts by the Lords for trade and Plantations, was one "about abetting the murtherers."—— In reference to this subject, our General Court, under date of Oct. 2, 1678,—express themselves as follows, to their agents.—*Pub. Com.*]

"The Court adds to what you answered therein, viz. Mr. Thomas Kirke, related to Sir David Kirke, and Mr. Thomas Kellond yet liuing, will testify the same, nor were Whalley and Goffe knowne here to vs to be such offenders, till his Majestie's Proclamation came ouer; nor doe wee know, nor could be informed, that they were in any part of this Colony after the said Proclamation came ouer; and, therefore, doe humbly beseech his Majestie and the Honourable Privy Councill to give full credence to what is here asserted by his Majestie's dutifull subjects, and that there was no neglect, much less contempt of his Majestie's command in this matter."

INSTRUCTIONS FROM THE COMMISSIONERS TO

EDWARD RANDOLPH, ESQ.

COLLECTOR, SURVEYOR, AND SEARCHER, OF HIS MAJESTIE'S CUSTOMS IN NEW ENGLAND.

[The subsequent instructions were the occasion of much litigation and other difficulty in the jurisdiction of Massachusetts.—Randolph let no opportunity escape of demonstrating his resolution to have them executed to the very letter. Nor was he any less backward to make his complaints known both here and in England, when they were disregarded,—as was frequently the case. On the other hand, our civil authorities were far from wishing him success in carrying his purpose into all the effect, which he desired and sought. They looked on the instructions, as trenching too much on their Charter privileges. As a matter of course,—such clashing views and sympathies rendered these instructions an object of deep attention and of prominent importance with the supporters and opposers of full Royal Prerogative.

It will be observed, that one of the signatures,—as made by the Commissioners of the Customs in London,—is that of Sir George Downing. The last gentleman's history is particularly interesting to New England, as one of their greatest friends and as a member of the first class, who graduated at Harvard College.—*Pub. Com.*]

Instructions from the Commissioners for managing, leauying, and causing to be collected his Majestie's Customes, Subsidies, and other Duties in England, to Edward Randolph, Esq., Collector, Surueyor, and Searcher of his Majestie's Customes, in New England, in pursuance of the direction of the Right Honourable Thomas, Earle of Denby, Lord High Treasurer of England.

First,—Whereas, in pursuance of an Act of Parliament, made in the twenty-fifth year of his Majestie's Reign, entitled "An Act of better securing the Plantations' Trades," which we herewith deliuer to you,—we have deputed you to be Collector, Surueyor, and Searcher of all the Rates, Duties, and Impossisions arising, and growing due to his

Majestie, by virtue of the said Act, in his Majestie's Colonye of New England, (that is to say) the Massachusetts' Colonye, Plymouth Colonye, Connecticutt Colonye, Rhode-Island, the Prouince of Mayne, and New Hampshire, and all other his Majestie's Colonys, and Islands in New England, which you are by the best wayes and means, you can to leauy and collect according to the tenour of the said act. And because the said act hath settled the Collection of the said Duties, under such penalties as by seuerall Lawes are inflicted for non-payment of, or defrauding his Majestie of his Customes in England, wee doe therefore deliuer to you a Book of Rates, wherein are the principall Lawes relating to the management of the Customes in England, and the Plantation Trades; videlicet, the Act of Tonnage and Poundage, the Act of Navigation, the Act for preuenting Fraud, the Act for Encouragement of Trade, and the Act for better regulating the Plantation Trade, and the said Act for the better securing the Plantation Trade; and you are to conforme yourselfe to the seuerall rules for managing the Customes according to the said Lawes, in all things wherein the same may be practicable with you, and to inform vs, or the Commissioners of his Majestie's Customes in England for the time being, what power, authoritie, or direction may be further necessary for the carrying on this his Majestie's seruice in the said Colonys.

2. You are before your goeing out of England, to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy before one of the Barons of the Exchequer, or the Lord Mayor of London, and the vsuall Oath for the faithful execution of your office before vs.

3. Having soe done you are forthwith to repaire to the said Colonye in New England, and to settle your vsuall Residence in the Port of Boston, in Massachusetts Colonye.

4. You are to appoint one Deputy att least in each of the aforementioned Colonys by Commission under your hand and Seale, and for whome you will be answerable; who are to take the vsuall Oaths for the faythfull execution of their employments before the Gouernour, or Deputy Gouernour, of such Colonye, respectively, before they enter upon the same, and then you are to furnish them with Copyes of your Instructions and some of the forementioned

Acts for their better information and guidance in the performance of their Duties.

5. You are to take care that noe Ship doe trade in his Majestie's Colonys in New England, but such as are by Lawe permitted to trade there, and you are to take care that all Ships and Vessells which by Lawe may trade in any of his Plantations that shall desire to ship and take on board any of the Plantation Commodities enumerated in the aforesaid Act of the twenty-fifth yeare of the King, doe not lade the same vntill it appears to you or your Deputy, that such Ship has giuen bond for carrying the same to England, Wales, or Berwick only, or to England, Wales, or Berwick or to some other of his Majestie's Plantations; and in case her bond be to carry the same to England, Wales or Berwick, or to some other of his Majestie's Plantations, in such case you are diligently to examine whether she take in any Tobacco of the growth of New England, as also in case she take in any Tobacco or other of the enumerated Goods which have not payd his Majestie's Customes at the Plantation, from whence the same came, to collect his Majestie's Dutyes for the same, according to the said Act of the twenty-fifth yeare of the king. And you are further to take care that before they take in any part of these sorts of Goods they make entry of the Ship with you or your Deputy, and also before their clearing, make report upon Oath of the contents of their Lading as to those sorts of Goods, both as to quantity and quality, to the best of their knowledge with the name of the Master that Laded the same,—and if any ship shall take in any of the said sorts of Goods chargeable with the Dutie aforesaid, before such entrye made as aforesaid, the Master thereof is liable to the penalty of one hundred pounds according to the Act for preuenting fraud, and the Statute made the first of Eliz. Chapt. 11. And, moreover, in case any such Ship shall take in any Goods chargeable with the Duties impossed by the said Act of the twenty-fifth yeare of the King before bond giuen as aforesaid, you are to make seizure of the said Ship and Goods, and proceed against the same according to Lawe.

6. In case any ship which by lawe may trade in any of his Majestie's plantations, shall ariue in any of his Majes-

tie's Colonyes in New England, with any of the said sort of goods of the growth of any of his Majestie's Colonyes, you are carefully to examine whether such ship had before lading, giuen bond according to law, and in case she had giuen no bond, then you are to make seizure of her and her lading according to lawe. And if it appeare she has giuen bond, you are to examine whither such bond was to come to England, Wales, or Berwick only, or to goe to England, Wales, or Berwick, or to some other of his Majestie's plantations, (formes of which bonds will be herewith deliuered to you), and, in case her bond was giuen to come to England, Wales, or Berwick only, you are to forbid her to vnload with you; and in case, (notwithstanding thereof) she shall putt any of the said goods on shoare, you are to keepe an exact account, and take good proof upon oath, of the quantity and qualitie of the said goods put on shoare, and transmit the same to vs, that we may take care for the suing and recouering the penalty and forfeiture of the bond giuen for such ship; and in case such bond was giuen in any of his Majestie's plantations, you are also with the first conveniency to giue notice, and the proof thereof to the Gouernor of such plantation and our Collector there, that they may take care for the speedy putting such bond in suit; but if her bond was to come to England, Wales, or Berwick, or to some of his Majestie's plantations in such case, you are to permit her to vnlade, examining the certificates from our officers, in the place where she laded, whereby to satisfie yourselfe, that his Majestie's duties were payd for the same, according to the aforesaid act of the 25th of the King; and in case it shall appeare that such ship hath any of the goods for which his Majestie's customes are not payd, you are to make seizure thereof, according to the lawes and rules for collecting his Majestie's customes in England.

7. You are to take notice, that the payment of the respective rates imposed by the Act of the 25th yeare of the King, vpon the several plantation Commodities therein named, that shall be shipped or laden on board any ship or vessel, (for which bond shall not be first giuen, to bring the same to England, Wales, or Berwick only), doth not giue liberty to carry the same afterwards to any other

place, than to some of his Majestie's plantations, or to England, Wales, or Berwick, and that notwithstanding the payment of the said duties, they are to giue bond to carry all the said goods to England, Wales, or Berwick, or to some of his Majestie's plantations, and not to be permitted to be laden vntil such bond giuen as is directed in the next preceding instruction.

8. And because there is no duty imposed by the said act vpon such ships, for which bond shall before lading be giuen to come to England, Wales, or Berwick only, you are to take spetiall care that none of the said goods which shall be pretended for any of the shipping bound to England, Wales, or Berwick, be vnder that colour stolen on board ships bound elsewhere, that haue not giuen bond as aforesaid, and so evade the Duties Chargeable by this Act to which end it will be necessary not only frequently to Visit all Ships or Vessells which haue not given bond as aforesaid, to come to England, Wales, or Berwick only, but allso where you find it necessary to put men on board such ships or vessells, to take an accompt of all goods laden on board them, and if anye of the aforesaid sorts of goods shall be found on board for which is noe warrant, you are to seize and prosecute the same according to law.

9. You are to take notice, that if the duties appointed by the act of the 25th of the king and certifyed to haue been payd before the said goods were brought into New England; in such case, there is nothing more to be payd for the same, neither vpon their landing in New England, nor vpon theire shipping out againe, but in case any thereof shall be shipped out, you are to take care that the ship doe first giue sufficient bond with one surety as aforesaid, to carry the same to England, Wales, or Berwick only, or to England, Wales, or Berwick, or some other of his Majestie's plantations aforesaid.

10. You are to keep exact accompts of all moneys by you received, or goods in lieu thereof, for his Majestie's customs, or vpon the accompt of seizures and forfeitures of ship or goods, and to make perfect inventory thereof into a booke to be kept for that purpose, with the names of the respective merchants entering the same with the Ship's names and their Masters, and the burthen of the

Vessells, and to what place bound,—and you are to take espetiall care to inform yourselfe rightly the true names of the Vessells and their Masters, because many falacies haue been committed and fraud practiced by changing their names, and obtruding ficticious names.

11. You are to vse youre vtmost endeauors to collect the duty in money, and not in goods, and what of necessity you must take in goods, you are to endeauor to sell to the best aduantage, and you are to remit the money you shall receiue for the said dutyes, by good bills of exchange or in ready money, to Richard Kent, Esq., his Majestie's receiuer generall and cashier of his customes, or to the receiuer generall and cashier of his Majestie's customes, for the time being, residing in London, and to send duplicates of such bills of exchange to vs. And such goods as you cannot dispose of, you are to ship at the best conuenience and cheapest rates, and to consigne them to Gay Moleworth, Esq., his Majestie's Warehouse keeper in the Port of London, or to the warehouse keeper in the same port, for the time being, and you are to send duplicates of the enuoyces of all such goods.

12. You are at the end of every six months, videlicet, the 25th March, and the 29th of September in euery year, to make vp a general accompt of all the whole management of this business, and by the first opportunety of shipping send the same to vs together with your accompt current, and the ballance thereof either in moneye, bills or Goods, directed or consygned as aforesaid, and duplicates thereof by some other Ship, for fear of miscarriage.

13. And for the further aduantage of his Majestie's seruice and reuenue of Customes in this Kingdome, you are to informe yourselfe whether the following Lawes relating to the Plantation trade, as to so much thereof as is to be performed within the seuerall Collonyes of New England, bee put in effectuall execution; videlicet, the Act of Nauigation made in the 12th yeare of his Majestie's Reigne,—the Act for regulating the Plantation trade made in the 22d and 23d yeares of his Majestie's Reigne,—the Act for encouragement of Trade made in the 15th yeare of his Majestie's Reigne, particularly for all Ships and Vessells that shall proceed to any of the Colonyes of New England

from this kingdome, the dominion of Wales or towne of Berwick vpon Tweed, whether Certificate be produced to the Gouenours of the respective Colonyes, or some person appointed by them to receiue the same from some Custome house of England, Wales, or Berwick, vnder the hands and Seales of the Customer, or patent Collector and Comptroller, or their Deputies, or the hand of the Commission Collector, or his Deputy, or two of them, that such Ship or Vessell hath giuen bond according to Lawe in the Port from whence she sayled, that in case she shall lade any of the Commodities, enumerated by those Lawes, the same shall be by such Ship brought to some Port of England, Wales, or Berwick, and there put on Shoare, and for such Ships or Vessells which shall come to your Plantation from any other port or place, which are by Lawe permitted to trade there, whither sufficient bond with one suretie, if giuen to the said Gouenour, or whome he appointes to receiue the same with condition that such Ship or Vessell shall bring all such of the said Goods or Commodities as she shall lade to England, Wales or Berwick only, or to England, Wales, or Berwick or some other of his Majestie's Plantations, and if contrary hearevnto, such Ship shall lade any of the said Commodities before such Certificate produced, or bond giuen as aforesaid, you are to take care that she be seized and prosecuted according to the said Act of Nauigation, and the Act for regulating the Plantation trade, and you are to vse your vtmost Care that the securities that are taken by the respective Gouernours in New England be of some sufficient, able persons and inhabitants of that Countrey, and you are not to permitt any Ship to load any of the enumerated Goods in any of his Majestie's Colonyes in New England, vpon anye Certificate of bond haueing been giuen in Ireland, but in that case before they lade anye of the said Plantation Commodities they are to giue bond to the Gouernour, or Deputy Gouernour of the respectiue Colonyes of New England, in which such Ship is with good security as aforesaid, and for the better auoyding false and counterfeit Certificates, you are to admit of noe Certificate of any Ships haueing giuen bond, nor of anye Ships haueing discharged her lading in England, Wales, or Berwick, but such as shall come to you vnder the hand

and seale of the Customer, or Patent Collector and Comptroller, or their Deputyes, or the hand of the Commission Collector, or his Deputy, or two of them of the Port where they gaue bond or unladed respectiuely, we haueing required the said respectiue officers, both in the Port of London, and the out ports, to signe and seale such Certificates accordingly, and we herewith deliuer to you one of each of the Impressions for each Colonye in New England, for the better detecting of svch fraud.

14. You are to take notice, that although by the Act of Navigation, the word Ireland is inserted in the condition of the bond with England, Wales, or Berwick, and permission thereby giuen to bring the Plantation Commodities to Ireland as well as England, &c. Yet by the Act for better regulating the Plantation Trade, the word Ireland is wholly repealed, and the condition of all such bond must be to bring theire respectiue ladings to England, Wales, or Berwick only, or to England, Wales, or Berwick, or some of his Majestie's Plantations.

15. You are carefully to inform yourselfe whether anye of the commodities of the growth, production or manufacture of Europe are imported into any of the Colonyes in New England, other than such as shall be brought directly from this Kingdome, the dominion of Wales, or town of Berwick, and in such shipping and soe nauigated as by Lawe is directed, except Wine shipped or laden in the Medeiras or Western Islands, or Azores, of the growth of either of them,—seruants and horses shipped and taken in in Scotland or Ireland of the growth or production thereof respectiuely in Ships qualifyed and nauigated as aforesaid, and you are to be the more carefull in regard to the French trade, as to the principall commodities thereof with England is prohibited, and therefore that endeavours will be vsed to furnish the Plantations therewith by indirect wayes and means, and if any Ship or Vessell shall import any other commodities of the growth, production, or manufacture of Europe of which due proofe shall not be made that they were shipped and laden in some port of England, Wales, or Berwick, the same Ship or Vessell, is forfeited with her guns, tackle, apparell, &c.: and also all such European commodities which you are to take care be seized and prosecuted according to Lawe and his Majestie's Proclamation,

pursuant therevnto of the 24th Nouember, in the twenty-seventh yeare of his Majestie's reign ; (Copy whereof we herewith deliver to you), and you are to vse your vtmost diligence so as those matters be managed according therevnto, and to giue vs notice of any failure therein.

16. And for the preuention of fraud, you are further to inform yourselfe whether any Ship or Vessell coming to any of the Colonyes in New England, lade or vnlade any commoditie whatsoeuer, vntill the Master or Commander thereof shall first haue made known to the Gouernour, or Deputy Gouernour of such Colony, or whome he shall appoint to that purpose, the arriuall of such Ship or Vessell, with her name and the sirname of the Master, and have sheued him that she is an English built Vessell, or otherwise quallifyed and nauegated as aforesaid, and to deliuer to him, a true and perfect inuentory of her lading, together with the place or places where such Goods were taken in.

17. And for the better preuention of Ships trading in his Majestie's Colonyes in New England, which by Lawe ought not to trade there, and for preuenting the importation of European Goods thither, contrarye to Lawe, and also for preuenting Ships laden with the enumerated Plantation commodities going to Scotland or Ireland, or anye other parts, but to England, Wales, or Berwick, or to some other of his Majestie's Plantations,—you are with your Accompt which you are to send to vs euery six months, to transmit to vs also an Accompt of each Vessell, that during such six months hath entered inwards and outwards in the respectiue Colonyes in New England, according to the forme herewith deliuered to you.

18. In all cases where bond hath been giuen by anye Ship or Vessell to the Gouernour, or Deputy Gouernour, in anye of his Majestie's Colonyes in New England. If you can discouer and make proof that anye such Ship or Vessell hath discharged her Lading contrary to her bond, or that a conuenient time hath passed in expectation of the returne of a certificate, after vnlading, according to tenor of her bond, and that noe certificate is returned, you are to take care that the bond be put in process, and if a certificate be produced, you are well and carefully to examine such certificate as aforesaid.

19. You shall, after Lady Day in every yeare, giue vs an Accompt what Commodities and Manufacture are rayseed and made in his Majestie's seuerall Colonyes in New England, and what Ships and Vessells doe belong to each of the said Colonyes, with their respective burthens, and to what Townes or Places they belong, and what nature, videlicit, whether Ships, Pinckes, Ketches, &c. : broad stern or narrow stearn, forecastle or noe forecastle, English built or foreign built, and what trade or trades to sea, are principally driven in each of the said Colonyes.

ED. DERING,
CH. CHEYNE,
G. DOWNING.

Custome House, London,
9th July, 1678.

[About to introduce the Commission to Sir Edmund Andros, we would remark, that few events in our Colonial History, were regarded by our fathers with more intense anxiety, than the changes produced in their political concerns, by the administrations of Dudley and Andros. On the 15th of May, 1686, the Rose Frigate arrived with a commission from James II, for the former of these two persons, as President of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine, and Narraganset. On the succeeding December 20th, the latter landed in Boston, and published his commission from the same monarch. This instrument gave him jurisdiction over the territory, just mentioned, with the addition of the Plymouth Colony. In a few days, it was applied to Rhode Island, and, the next year, to Connecticut. Under its authority, Sir Edmund subverted the foundations of our Charter government, and exhibited the spirit of his Royal Master in acts, which were considered exceedingly oppressive by a large majority of the Colonists. It served as the chief Constitutional law for New England,—till it was succeeded by another in 1688, which was so extended as to embrace New York and New Jersey. And even when thus formally nullified, its influence lived, and its effects were widely realized. It was the stimulus, by which Andros pursued the course, that brought him to the overthrow of a sudden Revolution on the 18th of April, 1689. Thus connected with vicissitudes and relations of no ordinary character, as to the past condition and experience of our country, we have thought it desirable for such a document, to hold a place among the pages of our Collections. *Pub. Com.*]

COMMISSION TO SIR EDMUND ANDROS.

James the Second, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. To our trusty and wel beloved Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, Greeting.

Whereas the Government of that part of our Territory and Dominion of New England, hereafter mentioned, is now in our hands, and being minded to give all protection and incouragement to our good subiects therein, and to provide in the most effectual manner, for their security and welfare; We therefore, reposing especial trust and confidence in the prudence, courage and loyalty of you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, out of our especial grace, certain knowledge, and meer motion, have thought fit to constitute and appoint, and by these presents do constitute and appoint you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, to be our Captain General, and Governour in Chief in and over all that our Territory and Dominion of New England in America, commonly called or known by the name of our Colony of the Massachusetts Bay, our Colony of New Plimouth, and our Provinces of New Hampshire and Main, the Narraganset Countrey, otherwise called the King's Province, with all the Islands, Rights, and Members to the said Colonies and Territories in any wise appertaining. And for your better guidance and direction, we do hereby require and command you to do and execute all things in due manner, that shal belong to the said office, and the trust we have reposed in you, according to the several powers, instructions, and authorities mentioned in these presents, or such further powers, instructions and authorities, as you shal herewith receiv, or which shal at any time hereafter be granted or appointed you, under our Signet and Sign manual, or by order in our Privy Council, and according to such reasonable Laws and Statutes as are now in force, or such others as shal be hereafter made and

established within that our Territory and Dominion aforesaid. And our wil and pleasure is, that you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, having (after your arrival in New England, and publication of these our Letters Patents) first taken the oath of Allegiance, together with the oath of duly executing the office of our Captain General and Governour in chief of our said Territory and Dominion, (which our Council there, or any three of them, are hereby required, authorized and impowered to give and administer unto you), you shal administer unto each of the Members of our Council, as well the oath of allegiance, as the oath of the due execution of their places and trust. And we do hereby give and grant unto you fful power and authority, to suspend any member of our Council, from sitting, voting and assisting therein, as you shal find iust cause for your so doing. And if it shal hereafter at any time happen, that by the death, departure out of our said Territory, or suspension of any of our Counsellors, or that otherwise there shal be a vacancy in our said Council, (any five whereof we do hereby appoint to be a Quorum), our wil and pleasure is, that you signify the same unto us by the first opportunity, that we may, under our Signet and Sign manual, constitute and appoint others in their room: but that our affairs at that distance may not suffer for want of a due number of counsellors, if ever it shal happen that there are less than seven of them residing upon the place, we do hereby give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, to choose as many persons out of the principal inhabitants thereof, as wil make up the fful number of our Council to be seven, and no more; which persons, by vertue of such choice, shal be to all intents and purposes, our Counsellors within our said Territory, until they be confirmed by us, or that by nomination of others by us, under our Sign manual and Signet, the said Council shal have seven persons in it. And we do hereby give and grant unto you fful power and authority, by and with the advice and consent of our said Council, or ye maior part of them, to make, constitute, and ordain Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, for ye public peace, welfare and good government of our said Territory and Dominion, and of the people and inhabitants thereof, and such others as

shal resort thereto, and for the benefit of us, our heirs and successors, which said Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, are to be as near as conveniently may be, agreeable to the Laws and Statutes of this our Kingdome of England. Porvided, that all such Laws, Statutes and Ordinances, of what nature or duration soever, be within three months, or sooner, after the making of the same, transmitted unto us under our seal of New England, for our allowance or disapprobation of them ; as also duplicates thereof by the next conveyance. And we do by these presents give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, by and with the advice and consent of our said Council, or the maior part of them, to impose and assess, and raise and levy such Rates and Taxes, as you shal find necessary for the support of the government within our Territory and Dominion of New England, to be collected and levied, and to be imployed to the uses aforesaid, in such manner as to you and our said Council, or the maior part of them, shal seem most equal and reasonable. And for the better supporting the charge of the government of our said Territory and Dominion, our wil and pleasure is, and we do by these presents authorize and require you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, and our said Council, to continue such taxes and impositions as are now laid and imposed upon the inhabitants thereof, and to levy and distribute, or cause the same to be levied and distributed to those ends, in the best and most equal manner, until you shal by and with the advice and consent of our Council, agree on, and setle such other taxes, as shal be sufficient for the support of our Government thereof, which are to be applied to that use and no other. And our further wil and pleasure is, that all public money raised or to be raised or appointed for the support of the Government within our said Territory and Dominion, be issued out by warrant or order from you, by and with the advice and consent of our Council, as aforesaid. And our wil and pleasure is, that you shal and may keep and use our Seal appointed or to be appointed by us for our said Territory and Dominion. And we do further give and grant unto you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, fful power and authority, from time to time, and at any time hereafter, by yourself, or by any other to be authorized by you, in that behalf, to

administer and give the oath of allegiance now established within this our Realm of England, to all and every such person as you shal think fit, or such as shal at any time or times pass into our said Territory, or shal be resident or abiding there. And we do by these presents ordain, constitute and appoint our Governor and Council of our said Territory and Dominion for the time being, to be a constant and setled Court of Record for the administration of justice to all our subiects inhabiting within our said Territory and Dominion, in all causes as wel civil as criminal, with ful power and authority to hold pleas in all cases from time to time, as wel in pleas of the Crown, and in all matters relating to the conservation of the peace, and punishment of offenders, as in civil causes or actions between party and party, or between us and any of our subiects there, whether the same do concern the realty, and relate to any right of freehold and inheritance, or whether the same do concern the personalty, and relate to matter of debt, contract, damage, or other personal iniury: and also in all mixt actions, which may concern both realty and personalty; and thereinafter due and orderly proceeding and deliberate hearing of both sides, to give judgment, and to award execution, as wel in criminal as in civil cases, as aforesaid: so always, that the forms of proceedings in such cases, and the judgments thereupon to be given, be as consonant and agreeable to the Laws and Statutes of this our Realm of England, as the present state and condition of our subjects, inhabiting within our said Territory and Dominion, and circumstances of the place wil admit. And we do further, hereby give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, with the advice and consent of our said Council, to erect, constitute and establish, such and so many Courts of Judicature and public justice within our said Territory and Dominion, as you and they shal think fit and necessary for the determination of all causes, as wel criminal as civil, according to Law and Equity, and for awarding of execution thereupon, with all reasonable and and necessary powers, authorities, ffees and privileges, belonging unto them; as also to appoint and commissionate fit persons in the several parts of our said Territory, to administer the oath of allegiance unto such as shal be

obliged to take the same. And we do hereby grant unto you fful power and authority, to constitute and appoint Judges, and in cases requisites, Commissioners of Oyer and Terminer, Justices of the peace, Sherifs, and all other necessary officers and ministers within our said Territory, for the beeter administration of justice, and putting the Laws in execution ; and to administer such oath and oaths as are usually given for the due execution and performance of offices and places, and for the clearing of truth in judicial causes. And our further wil and pleasure is, and we do hereby declare, that all actings and proceedings at Law or Equity, heretofore had or done, or now depending within any of the Courts of our said Territory, and all executions thereupon be hereby confirmed and continued, so far forth as not to be avoided for want or defect of any legal power in the said Courts ; but that all and every such judicial actings, proceedings and executions, shal be of the same force, effect and vertue, as if such Courts had acted by a iust and legal authority. And we do further by these presents wil and require you, to permit appeals to be made, in cases of error, from our Courts in our said Territory and Dominion of New England, unto our Governor and Council in civil causes ; provided the value appealed for, do exceed the sum of one hundred pounds sterling, and that security be first duly given by the appellant, to answer such charges as shal be awarded in case the first sentence shall be affirmed. And whereas we iudg it necessary, that all our subiects may have liberty to appeal to our Royal person, in cases that may require the same, our wil and pleasure is, that if either party shal not rest satisfied with ye judgment or sentence of our Governor and Council, they may then appeal unto us in our Privy Council, provided the matter in difference exceed the real value and sum of three hundred pounds sterling ; and that such appeal be made within one ffortnight after sentence; and that security be likewise given by the appellant, to answer such charges as shal be awarded in case the sentence of the Governor and Council shal be confirmed, and provided also, that execution be not suspended by reason of any such appeal unto us. And we do hereby give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, where

you shal see cause, and shal iudg any offender or offenders in capital and criminal matters, or for any ffines or fforfeitures due unto us, fit obiects of our mercy, to pardon all such offenders, and to remit such ffines and fforfeitures ; (treasons and wilful murder only excepted.) In which cases, you shal likewise have power, upon extraordinary occasions, to grant reprievs to the offenders therein, until, and to ye intent our pleasure may be further known. And we do hereby give and grant unto you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, by yourself, your Captains and Commanders by you to be authorized, fful power and authority to levy, arm, muster, command, or imploy all persons whatsoever, residing within our said Territory and Dominion of New England, and as occasion shal serv them, to transfer from one place to another, for the resisting and withstanding all enemies, pirates and rebels, both at land and sea, and to transfer such fforces to any of our plantations in America, as occasion shal require, for ye defence of the same, against the invasion or attempts of any of our enemies, and them, if occasion shal require, to pursue and prosecute, in or out of the limits of our said Territory and Plantations, or any of them ; and, if it shal so please God, them to vanquish, and being taken, either according to the Law of arms, to put to death, or to keep and reserve alive at your discretion : as also to execute Martial Law in time of invasion, insurrection, or war, and during the continuance of the same, and upon souldiers in pay ; and to do and execute all and every other thing which to a Captain General doth, or ought of right to belong, as fully and amply as any our Captain General doth, or hath usually done. And we do hereby give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, to erect, raise and build, within our said Territory and Dominion aforesaid, such and so many fforts, platforms, castles, cities, burroughs, towns and ffortifications, as you shal iudg necessary ; and the same, or any of them, to fortify and furnish with ordinance, ammunition, and all sorts of arms fit and necessary for ye security and defence of our said Territory ; and the same again, or any of them, to demolish or dismantle, as may be most convenient. And we do hereby give and grant unto you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, fful power and

authority, to erect one or more Court or Courts Admiral, within our said Territory and Dominion, for the hearing and determining of all marine and other causes and matters proper therein to be heard and determined, with all reasonable and necessary powers, authorities, ffees and privileges. And you are to execute all powers belonging to the place and office of Vice Admiral of and in all the seas and coasts about your Government, according to such commission, authority and instructions, as you shal receiv from ourself under the seal of our admiralty, or from our High Admiral of our plantations, for ye time being. And forasmuch as divers mutinies and disorders do happen by persons shipped and imployed at sea, and to ye end that such as shal be shipped or imployed at sea, may be the better governed and ordered; we do hereby give and grant unto you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, our Captain General and Governor in Chief, fful power and authority to constitute and appoint captains, masters of ships and other commanders, and to grant unto such captains, masters of ships and other commanders, Commissions to execute the Law Martial, and to use such proceedings, authorities, punishments, correction and execution, upon any offender or offenders, that shal be mutinous, seditious, disorderly, or any way unruly, either at sea, or during the time of their abode or residence in any of the ports, harbours, or bays of our said Territory and Dominion, as ye cause shal be found to require, according to Martial Law. Provided, that nothing herein contained, shal be construed to the enabling you, or any by your authority, to hold plea or have jurisdiction of any offence, cause, matter or thing, committed or done upon the seas, or within any of the havens, rivers or creeks, of our said Territory and Dominion under your Government, by any Captain, Commander, Lieutenant, Master, or other Officer, Seaman, Souldier, or person whatsoever, who shal be in actual service and pay, in and on board any of our ships of war, or other vessels acting by immediate Commission or Warrant from ourself, under Seal of our Admiralty, or from our High Admiral of the time being; but that such captain, commander, lieutenant, master, officer, seaman, souldier, and other person so offending, shal be left to be proceeded

against and tried, as the merit of their offences shal require, either by Commission under our Great Seal of England, as the Statute of the twenty-eighth of Henry the Eighth directs, or by Commissioners from our High Court of Admiralty, according to the Act of Parliament, passed in the thirteenth year of the Reign of the late King, our most dear and most intirely beloved brother of ever blessed memory, intituled an Act for ye establishing articles and orders for ye regulating and better Government of his Majestie's Navies, Ships of War, and fforces by sea, and not otherwise: saving only, that it shal and may be lawful for you, upon any such Captain or Commanders refusing or neglecting to execute, or upon his negligence or undue execution of any of the written Orders he shal receiv from you, for our service, and the service of our said Territory and Dominion, to suspend him the said Captain or Commander, from the exercise of his said office of Commander, and commit him into safe custody, either on board his own ship, or elsewhere, at the discretion of you, in order to his being brought to answer for the same, by Commission either under our Great Seal of England, or from our said High Admiral as is before expressed: in which case our wil and pleasure is, that the Captain or Commander so by you suspended, shal during such his suspension and commitment, be succeeded in his said Office by such Commission, or Warrant Officer of our said ship, appointed by ourself or our High Admiral of England for the time being, as by the known practice and discipline of our Navy doth and ought next to succeed him, as in case of death, sickness, or other ordinary disability happening to the Commander of any of our ships, and not otherwise: you standing also accountable to us, for the truth and importance of the crimes and misdemeanours, for which you shal so proceed to ye suspending of such, our said Captain and Commander. Provided, that all disorders and misdemeanours committed on shore by any Captain, Commander, Lieutenant, Master or other Officer, Seaman, Souldier, or person whatsoever, belonging to any of our ships of war, or other vessels acting by immediate Commission or Warrant from ourself under ye Seal of our Admiralty, or from our High Admiral of England, for ye time being, may be

tried and punished according to ye Laws of the place, where any such disorders, offences and misdemeanors shal be so committed on shore, notwithstanding such offender be in our actual service, and born in our pay on board any such our Ships of War, or other vessels acting by immediate Commission or Warrant from ourself or our High Admiral as aforesaid: so as he shal not receiv any protection for ye avoiding of justice, for such offences committed on shore, from any pretence of his being imployed in our service at sea. And we do likewise give and grant unto you, fful power and authority, by and with the advice and consent of our said Council, to agree with the planters and inhabitants of our said Territory and Dominion, concerning such lands, tenements and hereditaments, as now are, or hereafter shal be in our power to dispose of; and them to grant unto any person or persons for such terms, and under such moderate quit-rents, services and acknowledgments, thereupon to be reserved unto us, as shal be appointed by us; which said grants are to pass and be sealed by our Seal of New England; and (being entred upon record, by such officer and officers as you shal appoint thereunto), shal be good and effectual in Law against us, our heirs and successors. And we give you fful power and authority, to appoint so many ffairs, marts and markets, as you, with the advice of our said Council, shal think fit: as likewise to order and appoint within our said Territory, such and so many ports, harbours, bays, havens and other places, for the convenience and security of shipping, and for the better loading and unloading of goods and merchandizes, as by you with the advice and consent of our Council, shall be thought fit and necessary; and in them or any of them, to erect, nominate and appoint, Custom houses, Warehouses, and Officers relating thereunto; and them to alter, change, place or displace from time to time, as with the advice aforesaid, shal be thought fit. And above all things, we do by these presents wil, require and command you, to take all possible care for the discountenance of vice, and incouragement of vertue and good living, that by such example, the infidels may be invited, and desire to partake of the Christian Religion. And for the greater ease and satisfaction of our loving

subiects in matters of religion, we do hereby wil and require, and command, that liberty of conscience be allowed to all persons, and that such especially as shal be conformable to the rites of the Church of England, be particularly countenanced and incouraged. And forasmuch as, pursuant to the laws and customes of our Colony of the Massachusetts Bay, and of our other Colonies and Provinces aforementioned, divers marriages have been made and performed by the magistrates of our said Territory, our Royal wil and pleasure is, hereby to confirm all the said marriages, and to direct, that they be held good and valid in the same manner to all intents and purposes whatsoever, as if they had bin made and contracted according to the Laws established within our Kingdome of England. And we do hereby require and command all officers and ministers, civil and military, and all other inhabitants of our said Territory and Dominion, to be obedient, aiding and assisting to you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, in the execution of this our Commission, and of the powers and authorities herein mentioned; and upon your death, or absence out of our said Territory, unto the Commander in chief: to whom we do therefore by these presents, give and grant all and singular, the powers and authorities aforesaid, to be exercised and inioyed by him during our pleasure, or until your arrival within our said Territory and Dominion; and, if in case of such death or absence, there be no person upon the place appointed by us, to be Commander in chief; our wil and pleasure is, that the then present Council of our Territory aforesaid, do take upon them ye administration of the Government, and execute this Commission, and the several powers and authorities herein contained, and that ye first Counsellor, who shal be at ye time of your death or absence, residing within the same, do preside in our said Council, with such powers and [preheminences] as any former President hath used and inioyed within our said Territory, or any other our plantations in America, until our pleasure be further known, or your arrival as aforesaid. And lastly, our wil and pleasure is, that our Commission bearing date the seven and twentieth day of September, in the ffirst year of our Reign, constituting our trusty and wel beloved Joseph Dudley, Simon Broadstreet, and Wil-

liam Stoughton, Esqs., and others, to be our President and Council of our Territory and Dominion of New England, do, from the publication of these presents, cease and become void. And that you, the said Sir Edmund Andros, shal and may hold, execute and inioy, the office and place of our Captain General and Governor in Chief in and over our Territory and Dominion aforesaid, with all its rights, members and appurtenances whatsoever; together with all and singular the powers and authorities hereby granted unto you, for and during our wil and pleasure. In witness whereof, we have caused these our letters to be made patents. Witness ourself at Westminster, the third day of June, in the second year of our Reign.*

Per bre de Privato Sigillo.

BARKER.

[In copying original documents, we have deemed it proper to follow for the most part, the ancient orthography of words; but in the foregoing Commission, the words ending in *tion* and *sion*, being written *con*, with a circumflex over the syllable, and the Printer not having type with such a mark, or notation, we have given the usual spelling. *Pub. Com.*]

[The following Papers, relative to the period of Usurpation in New England, are on various topics. They constitute but a small part of those, which refer to the governments of Dudley and Andros. Their value is enhanced by the fact, that they help to form the principal documentary history of New England,—which is to be obtained on this side of the Atlantic. They were left, while the regular journals of the Government, were either concealed or destroyed, or carried out of the country after the Revolution of 1689. It is however some consolation,—that, in view of this lamentable event, copies of such journals had been periodically sent to the Plantation office in London,—and that we may yet have transcripts of them returned to our own shores.—*Pub. Com.*]

* [James the Second began to reign February 6, 1684-5, so that the date of this Commission is June 3d, 1686.]

PAPERS

RELATIVE TO THE PERIOD OF USURPATION

IN NEW ENGLAND.

I.

CASE OF JOHN GOULD, CHARGED WITH TREASON.

NEW ENGLAND, SC.

Rex Contra Gould in Sessione Speciali, 19*th Aug.* 1686.

The Jurors for our Sovereign Lord, the King, do upon their oaths present, that John Gould, sen., otherwise called Lieutenant Gould of Topsfield, in the County of Essex, husbandman, by force and arms, that is to say, between the 23d and 30th of May, in the second year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, &c., being evilly affected against our most sacred Lord the King aforesaid, his supreme and natural Lord, and devising with all his might, and intending to disturb the peace and common tranquillity of this his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England, as the same is now settled by his Majesty's Royal Commission under his great Seal of England, and the introducing again of the late Government dissolved by law, at a Riotous Muster of armed men gathered together by him, the aforesaid John Gould as their pretended officer, at Topsfield aforesaid, in the County aforesaid, in the year aforesaid, he the said John Gould as aforesaid, then and there being, did against the duty of his Allegiance, and in terror of his Majesty's liege People, maliciously, wickedly, seditiously, treasonably, and advisedly, speak and utter these malicious, treasonable, and seditious * speeches following,

* [Hutchinson, 1 v. p. 326, 3d edition, 1795, says, "one John Gold of Topsfield, was tried and convicted of treasonable words; what they were is not mentioned." Such words we have in the present document.—*Pub. Com.*]

viz.: If the Country was of his mind, they would keep Salem Court with the former Magistrates, and if the Country would go the Rounds, he would make the first, and would go and keep Salem Court, and would have his Company down to do it. And, further, he, the said John Gould as aforesaid, on or about the 11th day of July, at Topsfield aforesaid, in the County aforesaid, in the year aforesaid, maliciously, advisedly, and treasonably, did, say and utter, these malicious, treasonable, and seditious words following, viz.: That he was under another Government and had sworn to another Government, and did not know this Government, and this in manifest contempt of his Majesty's laws and Government here in New England, to the evil and pernicious example of all others in the like case offending, and against the peace of our said Sovereign Lord the King, his Crown and dignity.

JOHN WILD,
JOHN HOWE,
ISAAC CUMMINGS,
EPHRAIM HOW. } *Witnesses.*

II.

BOSTON, Sc.

To the Keeper of his Majesty's Jail in Boston.

The President of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England, with the Deputy President and others of his Majesty's Council, in Council assembled, the 5th day of August, 1686, having received information upon the oaths of Isaac Cummings, John Wild and John How, of several treasonable and seditious words, spoken by John Gould of Topsfield, against our Sovereign Lord the King, &c. These are, therefore, in his Majesty's name, to require you to take into your Custody the body of the said John Gould, and him safely keep until he shall be delivered by due course of Law, and for so doing this shall be your warrant, given at the Council House in Boston, the said 5th day of August, Anno Dom. 1686, Anno que, R. R. Jacobi Dei Gratia Angliæ, &c.—secundi.

Vera Copia.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Sec.*

III.

By the President and Council of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

Upon reading the petition of John Gould, now prisoner in the Jail of Boston, desiring liberty of the Prison yard to walk in, by reason of his indisposition of body. It is Ordered,

That the Prison keeper do permit the said John Gould, to have the benefit of the Prison yard, to walk in during his sickness, (the keeper taking care the said Gould make not an escape), till further order.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Sec'ry.*

Council House, Boston, August 12, 1686.

IV.

Rex versus *Gould.* A bill of costs at a special court of Oyer and Terminer, holden in Boston, for his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

Aug. 19*th,* 1686.

The Judge's fee,	£1,00,00.
Drawing the Indictment,	0,02,06.
Filing the Indictment,	0,01,00.
Taking 4 Recognizances in Court,	0,08,00.
Filing the same,	0,01,00.
For the *venire facias* to the Justice and Marshal,	0,02,00.
For reading the Evidences, No. 4,	0,01,00.
For taking and entering the verdicts,	0,02,00.
For entering the Judgment,	0,02,00.
For the Discharge,	0,02,00.
The Attorney General's fee, for pleading on the indictment,	1,10,00.
Ipswich Court Charges,	0,17,06.
Charges of witnesses at Boston,	2,12,00.
Paid in Court to 4 persons,	1,00,00.
Marshal Green's Journey,	2,00,00.
	£10,01,00.

V.

To the honourable, the President and Council of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

The humble petition of John Gould humbly sheweth,

That your petitioner shall ever pray for your Honour's prosperity, as in duty bound, for your favourable answer to his late petition; which, if he were able, he would readily embrace without further troubling your honours; but his fortune being very inconsiderable and that incumbered; and being uncapable to get a penny toward the support of his wife and eight children. He, therefore, most humbly prays, that your honours will be pleased to take his deplorable condition into further consideration, (he being heartily sorry for the idle words he uttered) that, on his payment of twenty pounds, fees of Court, and giving sufficient security for his good behaviour, he may be freed from his imprisonment. And your petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray, &c.

JOHN GOULD.

Ordered, that upon the petitioner's payment of the sum of twenty pounds to the Treasurer, and Prison fees and fees of Prosecution, that he be discharged his imprisonment upon giving bond for his good behaviour.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Secretary.*

Aug. 15, 1686.

VI.

By the President and Council of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

Upon reading the petition of John Gould, and considering the poverty of his family, it is ordered,

That upon the payment of Fifty Pounds in money, and charges of Prosecution, the remainder of his fine be respited and he be released of his imprisonment, he giving bonds for his good behaviour, according to order of Court.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Secretary.*

Aug. 25*th*, 1686.

VII.

Know all men by these presents, that I, John Gould senior, otherwise called Lieutenant Gould, of Topsfield, in the county of Essex (in his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England), husbandman, am holden and firmly bound unto the most Illustrious Prince, James II, of England, &c., King &c., his heirs, or lawful Attorney in the sum of one hundred pounds, to the which payment, well and truly to be made, I bind myself firmly by these presents, sealed with my seal, dated the twenty-fifth day of September, in the 2d year of the reign of our said Sovereign Lord, James II of England, &c., and in the year of our Lord, one thousand six hundred eighty and six. The condition of this obligation is such, that if the above bounden John Gould senior, do well and truly keep the peace of our Sovereign Lord, the King aforesaid, and shall, also, be of good behavior towards our said Lord, the King, and all his liege people, especially to the inhabitants of Topsfield aforesaid, then this recognizance to be void and of none effect, or otherwise to be and remain in full force, power and virtue.

JOHN GOULD, *Senior.*

Signed, sealed and delivered to the use of our said Sovereign Lord, the King, in the presence of Benjamin Bullivant.

VIII.

Letter from Edward Randolph to the Lord Treasurer.

Boston in New England, Aug. 23, 1686.

May it please your Lordship,

By the blessing of God and your Lordship's favour, I have performed his Majesty's commands, and brought this people to a nearer dependence upon the Crown. I have likewise served 2 writs of *Quo Warranto,* upon the other 2 Colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Island, who are preparing to make their humble submission to his Majesty.

But unless his Majesty please, in a very short time, to send us over a General Governor from England, all that is already done, will be of little advantage to his Majesty's interest. The independent faction still prevails, and persons of dangerous principles from England, Ireland and other places, are here received and highly encouraged. They have put Captain Blackwell Oliver, treasurer in London, son in law to Lambert, excepted in the Act of Indemnity, and a violent Commonwealth's man, to be of the commission of the peace, and a man consulted with in all public affairs. The independent ministers and others, make every ill use of his Majesty's indulgence and liberty of conscience, some of them have spoken treasonable words in their pulpits, of which (to no purpose) I have complained to the President and Council, so that I am humbly of opinion, that liberty of conscience will much obstruct the settlement of this place, unless duly regulated by the authority of a prudent Governor sent hither. Your Lordship may please to remember, that this commission was but temporary, and served only to unhinge the Commonwealth, which, for many years, was usurped and managed by a faction. All the members of the present Council, Mr. Mason and myself excepted, are either Church members, or strong abettors of that party, and even Mr. Dudly, our President, was not long since a zealous preacher amongst us, and though, while in London, he pretended to be of the Church of England, yet, since he is made President, courts and keeps private cabals with these factious ministers and others, who, in the time of Monmouth's Rebellion, refused to pray for his Majesty. His Majesty hath been graciously pleased to make me Secretary of his Council here, but the accounts of the late Treasurer and whatever relates to the discovery of his Majesty's Revenue, is kept from my knowledge. The public records, and all the grants and settlement of lands in this country, which ought to be lodged in my office, are otherwise disposed of, not being willing to intrust them with me, who have been, and (as they say), am still the grand enemy of their country. Mr. Wharton, a member of the Council, did openly declare, that his Majesty, in appointing me his Secretary and Register, intended to inthrall this people in vassalage. I have proposed the raising a rev-

enue, yet cannot be heard in Council. I have likewise pressed the making of strict orders to prevent the irregular trade of this place, but some of the Council are traders, and others by marriage or otherwise so nearly related, that, without a General Governor, interlopers will be countenanced, notwithstanding all my endeavours to the contrary. Here have been five or six ships seized and condemned, which inflames the people's malice against me. And the President, who by his office and duty is obliged to assist me, has openly refused, to his Majesty's great disservice. I question not but by his Majesty's uniting the several Colonies under one Government, to raise his Majesty a considerable revenue by quit rents towards the support of the Government, which will yearly increase. Of this the President, Mr. Wharton and several others, who have engrossed great tracts of land are sensible, and are, therefore, unwilling to admit me to discover their Estates. It was by your Lordship's favour, that his Majesty, in consideration of my past services, was pleased to grant me the office of Register and Secretary of this Government, a place in his Majesty's other plantations of considerable advantage; but they have taken so great prejudice against me, that they have disposed of the perquisites of that office to persons of their own stamp, so that, for all my trouble and attending the Council here, I am not like to make £20 a-year. My earnest expectation of a General Governor, supports me under all these difficulties and disappointments, and though they treat me so rudely, yet I shall continue to assert his Majesty's interest in the station I am placed in, and ever remain, Right Honourable,

Your Lordship's
most humble,
and most obedient Servant,
ED. RANDOLPH.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Treasurer.

IX.

ABDUCTION BY PIRATES.

To the honourable Joseph Dudly, Esq., President, and the Council of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

The humble petition of William Douglas sheweth,

That by reason of your petitioner's being brought from Carolina by Henry Holloway, the Pirate, contrary to your petitioner's will, whereby your petitioner has been greatly damaged, by his absence from Mr. Richard Daysey's plantation at Carolina, whereof your petitioner was overseer, and since the escape of your petitioner from the said Holloway when he rode in Casco, your petitioner was put to great streights both for food and linen, &c., whereupon he applied himself to the worshipful Edward Randolph for relief, who kindly ordered Erasmus Stevens to take care of him, to help him to what your petitioner wanted, till he had an opportunity, humbly to lay my condition before your honours. Therefore, your petitioner humbly prays your honours to take my condition into your consideration, and, also, desire your honour's order to let him depart this place and go to Mr. Richard Daysey's of Barbadoes, and likewise with all humility, does desire your honours to order Erasmus Stevens 40 shillings, which he laid out in necessaries for me, and your petitioner shall, &c.

WILLIAM DOUGLAS.

X.

A TEACHER OF FENCING.

To the honourable President and Council of his Majesty's Territory of New England.

The humble petition of Richard Crisp, humbly sheweth,

That whereas there are several gentlemen in this town, that are desirous your petitioner should instruct them in the use of weapons, and whereas there is a law, that forbiddeth the building of any edifice with wood, above such

a bigness as the said law permits, I humbly pray your honours, that you will please to grant me liberty to build a low, slight house for that purpose, of about twenty feet broad and 24 or 25 feet long, and about 10 feet high, with a flat roof of wood for that use, at the lower end of my garden, a convenient place for that purpose, being a great distance from any house, so that it can be neither dangerous for fire, nor offensive to any neighbors. The granting of this my request, will oblige me to pray for your honour's prosperity and be your humble servant.

Council House, Sept. 15, 1686.

Upon reading this petition,

License is granted to Mr. Crisp, to build a house as desired; provided it be not converted to any other use, and may be taken down when it appears to be of ill consequence to the town.

By order of the President and Council.

Ed. Randolph, *Secretary.*

XI.

RESPECTING THE ELEUTHERIANS.

To the honourable, the President and Council. The humble petition of Jeremiah Dummer, Simeon Stoddard, John Foster and Walter Gendall, in the behalf of themselves and sundry others, sheweth,

That Mr. Danforth, late President of the Province of Maine, formerly granted to your petitioners, Gendall and others, a tract of land for a Township in Casco Bay, on which some settlement and improvements are begun, and the town called North Yarmouth. But in regard to the poverty of the people, now concerned, and the sundry grants of farms in the said town and lands adjacent, and the proprieties of Mr. Gedney and Mr. Wharton, the said Town is not like to arrive to any considerable growth nor sustain the charges incident, without assistance and enlarge-

ment ; and whereas most of the distressed people, that are come from Eleutheria,* are rather willing, (if any will venture for their supply and accommodation), to settle in the country than to transport themselves.

And your petitioners, who have some of the best and most accommodable farms for the said Town, being not only willing to annex the same thereto, but otherwise to concern themselves for promoting a settlement, and hoping Mr. Gedney and Mr. Wharton may be prevailed with, upon condition that the waste and interjacent lands and islands may also be added thereto, to afford further enlargement and accommodation.

Your petitioners humbly pray, that all the waste lands between Mr. Wharton's land, (being about 3 miles to the westward of Puggamugga river) and Mr. Gedney's, bordering upon the former grant, together with the Islands before the same, being not impropriated, may be granted to your petitioners for themselves and such as may be willing to concern themselves with them, in planting and peopling the said Town, and that the said Puggamugga River, if Mr. Wharton shall consent thereto, may be the stated Easterly bounds of said Township ; or, otherwise, that meet persons may be appointed to run the line between such land, as you shall be pleased to allow to the said Town, and Mr. Wharton's land, that the present settlement may not be discouraged,—addition to a new plantation may not be driven away for want of those supplies, your petitioners are willing to add to the public charity and benevolence. And your petitioners ever pray, &c.

Jerimiah Dummer.
Simeon Stoddard.
John Foster.
Walter Gendall.

In answer to this Petition,

The President and Council do approve of, and allow of the petitioners removing the distressed Eleutherian people into Casco Bay, for their settlement and support, and will

* One of the Bahama Islands.

recommend their prayer for the grant of their lands, desired unto his Majesty for his Royal favour therein. By the President and Council.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Secretary.*

Council House, Sept. 15, 1686.

Also at the motion of the petitioners, it was further consented to by Richard Wharton and Bartholomew Gedney, Esqrs., that they will annex their lands in or near said Town to the same, and as improvement shall be made on their respective lands, to contribute to Town charge and in improvement, and Mr. Wharton consented, reserving his propriety, that the town bounds shall extend Eastwardly as far as Puggamugga River.

ED. RANDOLPH, *Secretary.*

XII.

Order that the Jurisdiction of Pemaquid be in the hands of Sir Edmund Andros.

JAMES R. Trusty and well beloved. We greet you well. Whereas we have thought fit to direct, that our Fort and Country of Pemaquid, in regard of its distance from New York, be for the future annexed to and continued under the Government of our Territory and Dominion of New England. Our will and pleasure is, that you forthwith deliver or cause to be delivered, our said Fort and Country of Pemaquid with the great guns, ammunition and stores of war, together with all other utensils and appurtenances belonging to the said Fort, into the hand of our trusty and well beloved Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, our Captain General and Governor in chief of our Territory and Dominion of New England, or to the Governor or Commander in Chief there, for the time being, or to such person or persons, as they shall impower to receive the same, and for so doing, this shall be your warrant. Given at our Court at Windsor, this 19th day of September, 1686,

in the second year of our reign. By his Majesty's command.

SUNDERLAND P.

Col. Dongan to deliver Pemaquid Fort to Sir Edmund Andros.

XIII.

Commission to Edward Randolph.

JAMES REX.

James the second by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, and to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting. Whereas we have thought fit to appoint a President and Council, until we shall send over a Governor in Chief to take care of all our Territory and Dominion in New England, commonly called or known by the names of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay, the Province of New Hampshire and Maine, and the Narraganset Country, otherwise called the king's Province, with all the islands, rights and members thereunto belonging, Know ye, that we reposing especial trust and confidence in the loyalty and abilities of our trusty and well beloved Edward Randolph, Esq., have given and granted, and, by these presents, do give and grant unto him, the said Edward Randolph, the several and respective places and offices of Secretary and sole Register of our Governor and Council, and of our government there, for the time being, of and in our Territories and Dominion aforesaid, and him, (the said Edward Randolph, Secretary and Register of our said Territory and Dominion), we do, by these presents, make, ordain and constitute, to have, hold, exercise and enjoy the said places and offices, or to him, the said Edward Randolph, by himself or his deputy or deputies during our pleasure, together with all fees, rights, privileges, profits, perquisites and advantages, to the said places and offices, or either of them, belonging or in any wise appertaining in as full and ample manner to all intents and purposes, as the Secretary and Register of our Island of Jamaica, or of any other

our Plantations in America, have had or do now receive and enjoy. And hereof all persons, whom it may concern, are to take due notice, and yield obedience thereunto accordingly. Given at our Court at Windsor, the 21st day of September, 1685, in the first year of our reign.*

XIV.

Order for the preservation of the Colony Records.

At a Council held in Boston, New England, on Wednesday, the 8th of December, 1686. Ordered,

That Wait Winthrop, Esq., Simon Lynde, Esq., Benjamin Bullivant, Mr. Isaac Addington, and Mr. Daniel Allen be a committee, with the Secretary, to receive and sort and form the records of the country, now in the hand of Mr. Edward Rawson, late Secretary, that so they may be apt and ready for service; and that the persons above named, be all sworn to the faithful discharge of their trust in this matter, and, to the end it may be forthwith proceeded in, Mr. Lynde and Mr. Bullivant are empowered, and hereby ordered to take the same from Mr. Rawson tomorrow, and remove them in the posture they are now in, into the Library Chamber, and that there go forth a strict warrant to Mr. Rawson, to deliver them accordingly. And it is further ordered, that two locks be put upon the Office where such papers shall be lodged, and that Mr. Bullivant or such other person, as Mr. Randolph shall depute to that service, shall keep the key of one of the locks, and Capt. Winthrop, Mr. Lynde, or Mr. Addington the other.

XV.

Instructions to Sir Edmund Andros, concerning the surrender of Rhode Island and Connecticut Charters.

James R.

Additional powers and instructions for our trusty and well beloved Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, our Captain

* [Though this commission is dated before the suspension of our Charter government, yet it was prepared for the Usurpation Administration,—and, therefore, is located with its documents. *Pub. Com.*]

General and Governor in Chief in and over our Territory and Dominion of New England in America, given at our Court at Windsor, this 13th day of September, in the second year of our reign, 1686.

Whereas we have been presented with the humble address of our Governor and Company of our Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation within our Territory and Dominion of New England, bearing date the 3d day of June last, wherein they take notice of our writ of *quo warranto* against their Charter, and thereupon declaring their resolution not to stand suit with us, have submitted themselves and their Charter to our Royal determination. Our will and pleasure is, and we do hereby authorize and empower you, upon your arrival in those parts, to demand, in our name, the surrender of their said Charter into your hands, in pursuance of their said declaration and address, and, taking our said Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation, under your Government, to exercise the like powers and authorities in reference to the same, as we have given and granted unto you by our commission under the great Seal of England, for the Government of other Colonies, within our said Territory and Dominion of New England, assuring our good subjects of our Colony and plantation aforesaid, of our Royal countenance and protection in all things, wherein our service and their welfare shall be concerned, and giving us by the first opportunity, an account of their behavior and of your proceedings in obedience to these our commands. And, in case it shall happen, that upon the like writ of *quo warranto,* issued against the Charter of our Government and Company of our Colony of Connecticut, they shall be induced to make surrender of their Charter, our will and pleasure is, and we do hereby authorize and empower you in our name, to receive such surrender, and to take our said Colony of Connecticut under your Government, in the same manner as before expressed. By his Majesty's command.

SUNDERLAND P.

XVI.

Confirmation of Colonial Officers.

By his Excellency, the Governor in Council. These are to declare and publish, that all officers civil and military, and the officers of his Majesty's Revenues, together with all duties and imposts, as now settled in this town of Boston, and other parts of this Government, are continued till further order, and all persons are required to conform thereunto accordingly.

E. Randolph, *Secretary.*

Council House, Dec. 20th, 1686.

XVII.

Order for the first Council Meeting under Sir Edmund Andros.

Sir,

His Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, Captain General and Governor in Chief, arrived here yesterday, at which time his Majesty's commission, bearing date the third of June last, was published, his Excellency has appointed a General Council, to be holden here on Thursday the 30th of this instant, December, and directed me to acquaint all the members thereof, that they may be present accordingly. His Excellency presents his humble service to you, and would be glad to see you at Boston.

I am, Sir,

Your humble servant,

Edward Randolph.

XVIII.

Letter of Sir Edmund Andros, written probably to the Governor of Rhode Island, concerning the surrender of their Charter.

Boston, Dec. 22, 1686.

Sir,

This is to acquaint you, that I arrived yesterday, at which time his Majesty's Commission, bearing date at Windsor, the third day of June last, in the second year of

his reign, appointed me Captain General and Governor in Chief of his Territory and Dominion of New England, and his Majesty having, upon the address and submission of the Charter, accepted thereof, hath commanded and authorised me upon my arrival in these parts, to demand in his Majesty's name, the actual surrender of the said Charter, and to take the Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation into my care, as part of the government, and to assure his good subjects in your parts of his Majesty's countenance and protection in all things, in which his Majesty's service and your welfare shall be concerned, and hath constituted and appointed you, Walter Clark, Jo. Sandford, John Coggeshall, Walter Newbury, John Greene, Richard Arnold and John Alborough, Esqrs., to be members of the Council for the said Government. And I, having appointed a general Council to be held in this place on Thursday, the 30th of this instant December, you are to communicate this to the above named members of the Council, and, together with them, to give your attendance for his Majesty and Country's service as above. I am your very affectionate friend, and desiring to hear from you in the mean time.

XIX.

Letter from Sir Edmund Andros, respecting the surrender of Connecticut Charter.

Boston, in New England, December the 22d, 1686.

Sir,

This is to acquaint you, that I landed yesterday, and all well here. His Majesty, having been pleased by his Letters Patents, bearing date at Windsor, the third day of June, in the Second year of his Majesty's Reign, to constitute and appoint me to be Captain General and Governor in Chief of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England. And by his Majesty's order of the 13th of October last, I am particularly empowered and authorised to receive the surrender of your Charter, if tendered by you, and to take you as part of this his Majesty's Government, to enjoy all the benefits and advantages granted in his Majesty's said Letters Patents, in which and in all

things else relating to your welfare, I am ready to contribute. Therefore desire to hear speedily from you, being

Your very affectionate friend,

E. Andros.

To Robert Treat, Esq., Governor of Connecticut.

XX.

Petition to Sir Edmund Andros, by Richard Smith, that the Island hereinafter mentioned, may be restored. Dated Dec. 22d, 1686.

The Humble Petition of Richard Smith, of Rochester, within the Narragansett Country, Humbly sheweth,

That there having been long hanging in contest and suit between some of the inhabitants of Rhode Island and your Petitioner, a claim and pretence of title made by them, unto a small Island lying near the Town of Bristol, commonly called Hog Island, alias Chesawanoch, which your petitioner many years since purchased of the Indian Natives, and had confirmation thereof from the General Court of New Plymouth. But of later time hath been forcibly kept out, and interrupted in his peaceable possession and improvement thereof, by the Rhode Islanders, from which tiresome contest and unjust molestation, your petitioner hopeth, by your Excellency's happy access to the Government, speedily to be relieved, and to have a just and final issue put thereto.

XXI.

The first Meeting of the Council under Andros.

At a Council held in Boston, New England, on Thursday, December 30th, 1686, present,

His Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, *Knight, Governor.*
Joseph Dudley,
Thomas Hinckley,
Wait Winthrop,
Jno. Usher,

Barnaby Lathrop,
John Walley,
John Coggeshall,
Richard Arnold,
William Stoughton,
Richard Wharton,
Edward Tyng,
Jonathan Tyng,
William Bradford,
Daniel Smith,
Nathaniel Clark,
Walter Newbury,
John Alborough,
Edward Randolph, *Secretary.*

Upon opening of the Council, his Excellency commanded the members to be called over by their names, and take their places, as set down in certain articles of instruction from his Majesty, to his Excellency the Governor.

The members of the Council, being accordingly seated, his Majesty's commission for government of this his Territory and Dominion of New England, was read, and also, the instructions under his Majesty's sign Manual, empowering his Excellency to receive the Charter of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation, was likewise read.

His Excellency proceeded to administer the oath of allegiance, and the oath, also, for the due administration of justice, and commanded such persons of the Council, as had not already taken these oaths, to stand up and answer to their names. Viz., Thomas Hinckley, Walter Clark, Barnaby Lathrop, William Bradford, Daniel Smith, Jno. Walley, Nathaniel Clark, John Coggeshall, Walter Newbury, Richard Arnold and John Alborough, who (all of them), Walter Clark and Walter Newbury excepted, did take the oaths, and showed assent thereto, by holding up their right hands.

Walter Clark and Walter Newbury, gave also their express consent to the oath of allegiance, and the oath for the administration of justice in the Government, according as directed in his Majesty's late commission to the President and Council, professing themselves obliged in all good conscience before God so to do, and that, under the utmost penalties of perjury in all respects, the members of the

Council being severally asked their opinion, did allow of their protestation. His Excellency in a short discourse, encouraged the members to freedom in debates. Walter Clark and Walter Newbury, acknowledge the surrender of the Charter made to his Majesty at Windsor, but fearing that surrender was not effectual for avoiding all mistakes, they had presented another humble address to his Majesty under the public Seal of their Colony, and had sent over agents to pray his Majesty's favor towards them, and W. Clark further added, the Charter of Rhode Island was in his custody at Newport. It was moved, that a Proclamation should be made through all the Colonies and Provinces of this Government, that all Officers both Civil and Military, should be continued in their places of trust, and that the laws not repugnant to the laws of England in the several Colonies, should be, and observed during his Excellency's pleasure.

Ordered, That the proclamation be drawn up and presented to his Excellency in Council, tomorrow by nine of the clock, in the morning.

On Friday, John Fitz Winthrop and John Jenks took their seats, as members of the preceding Council.

XXII.

[Eleutherians, see page 158 of this volume.]

His Excellency the Governor, Sir Edmund Andros.

The Petition of Jeremiah Dummer, Simeon Stoddard, and Walter Gendall, Humbly Sheweth,

That in July last past, arrived at this Town of Boston from Eleutheria, one of the Bahama Islands, many families, having been spoiled by the Spaniards, of all they possessed, and driven off naked and destitute, who, on arrival here, were like to be a continual charge unto this place. Your Petitioners considering the same, made application unto the President and Council, offering, that if the interjacent land at the head of Casco Bay, situated between Mr. Wharton and Gedney's lands in that place, might be granted unto us, who have each of us some land upon the place, that we would advance money for their support and supply and settlement on said land, who were pleased thereupon, to pass an order for removing the said distressed

people unto that place, declaring they would recommend our request unto his Majesty, for his Royal favor therein. Whereupon we were at the charge of removing about nine families of the said distressed people, and have been at considerable charge, in furnishing them with necessaries for their supply and support this winter. And must further disburse for their future settlement, if we are encouraged therein. And being informed that your Excellency hath direction and power from his Majesty, to confirm such lands under the Seal of this, his Majesty's Dominion of New England, your petitioners therefore humbly pray, that your Excellency would please to grant and confirm the said tract of land, with all its appurtenances and privileges, unto us, our heirs and assigns for ever, and we shall be ready further to disburse for the settlement of these and such others, as we shall obtain to settle on the place, who, without further aid and assistance, will be under utter discouragements, and not be able to proceed any further. And we shall also yield such reasonable acknowledgment as is fit, and subscribe ourselves, your Excellency's

Most Humble Servants,
JEREMIAH DUMMER.
SIMEON STODDARD.

Boston, January 6th, 1686-7.

XXIII.

Quit Rents in Maine, as introduced by the Usurpation, and effects of them.

To his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, Governor of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion in New England. May it please your Excellency,

The late Government of the Massachusetts Company, having purchased the land and title of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, in the Province of Maine, and upon such purchase, designing and intending to give all encouragement to all persons, that incline to go and set down, and settle themselves and families in and upon the said Province of Maine, the said late Government did, by Commission under the seal of the late Government, empower Thomas Danforth,

Esq., to lay out and appoint places for Townships in the said Province, and, also, to grant power unto such Townships or Inhabitants, or the selectmen of all such Townships, to give and grant land to any persons whatsoever, that would settle themselves and families, in the said Province under such quit rent, as did then seem good unto the said Thomas Danforth. In pursuance whereof, several persons and their families have sat down in several Townships, in and upon the said Province, with great charge, trouble and expense, and many more in probability would, had not the burden of quit rents discouraged. It is therefore humbly prayed of your Excellency, that such Townships and settlements, so made as above, may have your Excellency's confirmation of their titles, obtained as above; and the quit rents, appointed to be paid as above, for such lands, being experimentally found to lie heavy upon the inhabitants there residing, may receive some abatement.

And your petitioners of the whole Province aforesaid, as in duty bound, shall ever pray, &c.

EDWARD TYNG.

XXIV.

A Specimen of Licenses for Marriage.

Know all men by these presents, that we, Nathaniel Peck of Boston, and William Coggeshall of the same Town, in his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England, are firmly bound unto Edward Randolph, Esq., Secretary of his Majesty's Territory and Dominion, in the sum of fifty pounds, current money of New England, to which payment well and truly to be made, we bind ourselves jointly and severally, our heirs, executors, administrators and assigns, firmly by these presents. Witness our hands and seals, this 11th day of January, 1686-7, in the second year of his Majesty's reign.

The condition of the above obligation is such, that if the above bound Nathaniel Peck and William Coggeshall, shall sufficiently keep and save harmless, the aforesaid Edward Randolph, Esq., from all troubles, which may or shall any way so arise by the said Edward Randolph's granting a license to the aforesaid Nathaniel Peck, to be joined in

matrimony, that then this obligation to be made void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

NATHANIEL PECK.
WILLIAM COGGESHALL.

Signed, sealed and delivered, in the presence of us,

John Clarke, Mary her mark Peck.

XXV.

Extract relative to a Tax, which, on account of the mode of its being assessed, produced great excitement.

That a single country rate of one penny in the pound, be served and collected in all the late Colonies and Provinces, towards defraying the public charges of this Government, according to former usage. *January* 13, 1686-7.

XXVI.

License for the Press, according to previous Colonial custom.

January 28, 1686-7.

Ordered, that copies of books, &c., to be printed, be first perused by Mr. Dudley, late President, and upon his allowance of them for the press, that one copy thereof so allowed and attested by him, be brought to the Secretary's office, to be left on record, and receive from him an imprimature.

XXVII.

Petition of Bristol to be excused from the Tax recently ordered.

May it please your Excellency,

Whereas a warrant from the Treasurer is come to us, and another to the Constable, for a single country rate of one penny in the pound, to his Majesty for support of the Government, to be assessed and levied on our inhabitants, as per said warrant more fully expressed :—

We humbly offer to your consideration, this small Isthmus or Neck of Land, on which our Town is now settling, was purchased not long since by some of us, at a very dear rate, being a little spot, wanting many advantages of other plantations, our neighbors, of which our first purchasers and the Committee, appointed for the sale thereof, were very sensible. Our purchasers having therefore paid a considerable sum of money, and under strict obligation to settle a town in a short time, and so necessarily to conflict with many and great charges, and unavoidable difficulties, the ordinary and sure concomitants of young plantations, on these considerations, and to encourage us in our beginning, the aforesaid Committee by the order, and having the approbation of the General Court of New Plymouth, sold and warranted to us, as far as they could, some privileges, of which this was one and not the last, viz., that we should be exempted from all public country rates, charges, levies or assessments for seven years, it being an exemption or privilege usual to be given, though by us bought, at the first settling of Towns, which term is not yet expired, something more than a year yet to come. Sir, we humbly hope for, and beg your ratification of these our purchased privileges. Be pleased to look upon us, as we are, a poor infantine place, struggling with many difficulties and discouragements, not only wanting your favor in this particular affair, but further begging your Excellency's benign goodness and gracious encouragement to be extended to us, as your wisdom shall direct for our increase, and that our plantation, though small at present, may grow up and thrive under the happy cherishing and enlivening influence of your good Government. Sir, we dare not further trouble you at present, but humbly beg pardon for these rude lines, which we justly fear divert you from much more weighty affairs.

Your Excellency's
Unworthy Servants,
BENJAMIN CHURCH.
JOHN RODGERS.
THOMAS WALKER.

Selectmen for the Town of Bristol.

Bristol, New England, February 18, 1686-7.

XXVIII.

Fees for the Custom-House.

Vessels inward bound.

Every vessel exceeding 40 Tons, . . .	£00,3,06
If above 40 Tons, ...	5,00
For a permit or license to unload, . . .	1,00
For an oath upon a Majesty's entry and clearing, ...	0,06

Vessels outward bound.

Every vessel's entry to load, ...	1,00
Every vessel's clearing not exceeding 40 tons, ...	3,06
If above 40 tons for clearing, ...	5,00
For a bond for his Majesty's use, . . .	5,00
For a certificate when the bond is given,	5,00
For a certificate to take up a bond, . .	5,00
For registering and discharging a bond,	0,06
For registering a certificate, ...	0,06

For coasting vessels and wood boats.

Outwards.—To entering bond once a year, not to carry European or plantation commodities without entry, ...	5,00
For entry of every coasting vessel loading European commodities, or of the plantations, ...	1,06
For a license to deliver their loadings, .	1,06
For all coasting vessels, trading to and from the neighboring Colonies, . . .	2,06
For a bond for coasting vessels carrying any of the enumerated commodities out of this Government, ...	1,00

ED. RANDOLPH, *Collector.*

XXIX.

Commercial Orders to Governor Andros.

Sir,

Having notice that under color of a trade to Newfoundland for fish, great quantities of wine, brandy and other European goods, are imported from thence into his Majesty's plantations, particularly New England, on an allegation, that the said New Foundland is accounted as one of the said plantations. To which purpose, it is now become a Magazine of all sorts of goods brought thither directly from France, Holland, Scotland, Ireland and other places, which is not only contrary to law, but greatly to the prejudice of his Majesty's Customs, and to the trade and navigation of this Kingdom. To the end, therefore, that so destructive and growing an evil may be timely prevented, we desire you, for his Majesty's service, to give public notice to all persons concerned within your government, that the New Foundland is not to be taken or accounted a plantation, being under no Government or other regulation, as all his Majesty's plantations are. But that all European goods, imported from thence, will be seized, together with the ships importing the same, as forfeited by the act of trade, made in the 15th year of his late Majesty's reign, and his said Majesty's Proclamation pursuant thereunto. And you are strictly to give in charge to all his Majesty's officers, that they be very careful not to suffer any European goods, other than what are by the aforesaid law and Proclamation accepted, to be imported into New England. But such as shall appear by coquets or authentic certificates from some port of England, Wales, or Berwick, to have been there duly shipped and put on board, under forfeiture of ships and goods as aforesaid. And, in order to prevent the acceptance of forged coquets or certificates, which have been heretofore practised, you are, according to his Majesty's particular instructions to you, to give effectual orders that the coquets for such goods be produced

to the collector of the Customs in New England, or to his deputies there, for the time being, before the unloading of the goods; and that no European goods be landed, but by warrants from the said Collector or his Deputies, in the presence of one or more officers, appointed thereto. And that for the better prevention of frauds of this kind, no ship or vessel do load or unload any goods or commodities whatsoever, until the master or commander thereof has first made known to yourself, or the person appointed by you, the arrival of such ship or vessel, with her name and size, name of the master, and has shown that the ship or vessel is duly navigated and otherwise qualified according to law, and hath delivered a true and perfect inventory of her lading, together with the place or places, in which the said goods were laden and taken into the said ship or vessel, under forfeiture of such ship and goods. We are frequently informed from our agent in Scotland, of several ships coming thither with the innumerated plantations' commodities, without touching to clear in any port of England, Wales, or Berwick, being generally ships, that pretend to belong to, and give bond in the plantations; which are plain instances of the great neglect or corruption of the officers, employed in executing the laws, without which we think it almost impossible, that ships should take in their whole lading, and not be discovered either at their arrival or departure. Wherefore, we desire you, for his Majesty's service, not only to make a strict and speedy examination of these and the like frauds, tending so apparently to the prejudice of his Majesty's revenue, and the trade of this kingdom; but to take care and give effectual orders, that the like may be prevented for the future, which may be done these two ways; first, by your care, that all ships, not producing certificates of bond given in England, Wales, or Berwick, be obliged to give bond to yourself or Naval officer according to law, before they load or take on board any of the innumerated commodities under the penalty of the forfeiture thereof; second, that such ships having so given bond, you use your utmost care and diligence to discover whether the conditions thereof are performed, and certificate thereof produced in a convenient time after, or,

in failure thereof, that the said bonds be effectually prosecuted. We are

Your most humble Servants.

T. Chudleigh.
Ch. Cheyne.
D. North.
Jo. Wenden.
J. Butler.
Buckworth.

To Edmund Andros, Governor of New England.

Custom House, London, 12th January, 1686-7.

XXX.

Petition about Lands and Indian Hostilities.

To his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, &c.

The petition of John Maine, of Casco Bay, Humbly Sheweth,

That your petitioner about 30 years since purchased a house in Casco Bay, with 60 acres of land adjoining, situated near the middle of Casco Bay, on the Westerly side of "Westgostuggo" River, at a certain place there, commonly called and known by the name of Maine's Point, also, he took up about six acres of salt marsh, and hath enjoyed the same, as it is situated near the head of the Eastermost branch of "Westgostuggo" River, until the late war with the Indians, at which time two of his sons in law were slain, his evidences for his housing and land were burnt ; and he with his wife and the rest of the family, hardly escaped with their lives. And some years after the war was ended, he returned, and ever since his return, hath kept his portion of said lands, and some, that were strangers there before the war, and have since settled there, have laid out sundry lots on your petitioner's upland, have taken the said marsh land into their hands, and refused your petitioner the improvement thereof. Your poor petitioner, therefore, humbly prays, that your Excel-

lency will please to pass an order to Captain Edward Tyng to see, that he may be settled in his just right, so shall he ever pray, &c.

JOHN MAINE.

1687.

XXXI.

Letter from Sir Edmund Andros to the Governor and Council of Connecticut, relative to their Charter.

Boston, June 13, 1687.

By my several letters and advice from England, I am assured that by this time, there would be an issue put to, and judgment entered upon the *quo warranto*, against your Charter, and soon expect his Majesty's command accordingly; of which I doubt not but you are advised, as many of your friends in these parts, who have prevailed with me on your Assembly's meeting, to express my inclinations. Still not to be wanting for your welfare, if you yet give me opportunity, by accepting his Majesty's favor, so graciously offered you, in a present compliance and surrender, and not with vain hopes to delay until execution be served upon you, when too late to acquit yourselves of your duty to his Majesty and trust reposed in you by the Colony, which, being of such importance, deserves your best considerations and resolves accordingly. This is by Edward Randolph, Esq., to whom you may give entire credence in any thing relating to this matter from

Your very affectionate friend,

E. ANDROS.

To the Honorable, the Governor and Council of Connecticut, at Hartford.

XXXII.

Account of Disbursements of his Majesty's Government.

	Dr.
Dec. 20, 1686.—To cash paid John Marsh, sent post to Dunstable to give an account of the arrival of Sir Edmund Andros, to Jonathan Tyng, Esq., one of the Council,	£00,10,00
Dec. 30.—To cash paid John Perry, as post to Connecticut, carrying letters from his Excellency to that Government, . . .	00,10,00
Feb. 25, 1687.—To cash paid John Blake, coroner, for inquiring into the death of Grace Peter, who was found dead in the dock at Boston, being customary according to former laws, but now ended, . . .	00,13,04
To cash paid for beer and cider, to the drummer and soldiers at Charlestown, expended at an extraordinary meeting of the militia, his Excellency visiting the Town, . . .	01,15,00
To cash paid Edward Crocket, executioner in Boston, for his quarter's salary, commencing the 20th of November last past, and ending the 20th instant, being according to agreement of former government, .	05,00,00
March 16.—To cash paid Edward Gale for piloting his Majesty's frigate, the King Fisher, from Cape Ann to Nantasket Roads near Boston, and, also, the attendance of said Gale's Ketch on the Frigate, to assist in case of any disaster, ...	10,00,00
March 19.—To cash paid John Cornelist for the passage of sundry soldiers from the Castle near Boston, to the fort at Pemaquid, as per receipt, ...	06,00,00
To cash paid John Perry, post to Connecticut, with letters from the Governor and Council,	00,10,00
To 2 yards of Duffles delivered an Indian Sachem, per the Governor's order, . .	00,09,00
To cash paid George Monck, at the sign of the Blue Anchor, for his entertainment of	

the Council at sundry times, from the 20th of December to the 22d of March following, being in attendance on Council, and as a committee for drawing an abstract of the former laws, to be presented to the Governor and Council, as appearing per account, it being according to former custom, though for the future to cease, . .	51,03,04
April 12.—To cash paid Florence Kane for sundry disbursements, per order of his Excellency the Governor, which account was presented to the Council, and allowed of, ...	48,08,02
To cash paid William Smith, joiner, for work done in the Town House, as per his account,	14,04,09
June 25.—To cash paid Nathaniel Homes, gunner at the Castle, for one quarter's salary, to the 25th March last, ...	07,10,00
To do. paid William Peling, gunner's mate at the Castle for one quarter's salary, ending the 20th May last, ...	04,10,00
To cash paid Richard Bray, gunner's mate of his Majesty's Fort at Boston, for one quarter's salary, ending the 3d of May last, .	03,00,00
	£154,03,07

Jno. Usher.

XXXIII.

An Order relative to Pemaquid and Penobscot.

By his Excellency.

So soon as Ensign Andros shall arrive, you are to deliver up the garrison and soldiers to be under his command, and having received ashore orders for the garrison, you are to repair on board his Majesty's Ketch Speedwell, and with the soldiers sent in her, and such others, as you shall think necessary, by the first opportunity of wind and weather, to sail for the river of Penobscot, to view the

state and condition of that river and what Christian inhabitants are there, where, if you find any, you are to treat them with all civility, and direct them to apply to Pemaquid or this place, as occasion may be. You are, likewise, to use your endeavor to see and speak with the Indians there, particularly Madockawando, the Chief Sachem, and let them know you are ordered by me, under his Majesty, to visit that part of his Dominion and inquire of their welfare, and give to the Sachem a blanket and an anchor of rum, to drink among them. In your return from Penobscot, you are to call at the Island Mintinicus* and view the state and condition of that place and the inhabitants there, encouraging them in their fishery. And you are to appoint and swear a Constable for the keeping of the peace and good order for one whole year, and until another be sworn in his stead. And let the inhabitants know, that, on all occasions, they may apply to Pemaquid or to me here. In the performance of this voyage, you are to make as much dispatch as possible, and to return to Pemaquid where you are to take the charge and command of the garrison and soldiers again, and Ensign Andros with the said ketch to return hither with all speed, unless any thing extraordinary for the King's service, in which case you may detain the ketch as occasion may require. Given under my hand at Boston, the 27th day of June, 1687.

To Ensign Joshua Pipon, Commander at Pemaquid.

XXXIV.

Vessel in distress arrived at Boston.

By his Excellency.

Whereas Bartholl Otto Schmoll, commander of the ship Fortune, belonging to the most illustrious Prince Frederick Cassimir, Duke of Courland, hath by his petition set forth, that he, being employed in the service of the said Prince, as Commander in Chief of the Island of Tobago, and failing there of seasonable supply of provision, and being reduced to great extremity and distress, for the preserva-

* Now called Matinicus.

tion of the life of his Master's subjects and the ship, he designed with the said ship and people for Barbadoes, but the wind not favoring, bore down for Curacoa, and in the night fell to the leeward of that port, and was forced for Jamaica, where he got supply to bring him to this port, and, being in want of every thing, and his ship much out of repair, prayed to have liberty to come into this port, and to supply his wants, and that, if occasion for preservation of his Master's ship, he may lay her up here till further order. The which allegation, on examination of several of his officers and company upon oath, appearing to be true, and the petitioner producing his commission from the Duke of Courland, dated the 30th of November, 1685, I have, therefore, with advice of the Council, granted unto the said Bartholl Otto Schmoll, the liberty of him, desired accordingly. Given under my hand at Boston, in his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England, the 9th day of July, in the 3d year of his Majesty's reign. Anno Domini, 1687.

XXXV.

Indian Desolations, &c.

To his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros.

The humble petition of Elizabeth, formerly the wife of Richard Hammon, now the wife of John Rowdon, Humbly Sheweth,

That your petitioner in the late Indian War, being possessed of a plentiful estate in mills and other things, which was much damnified, burnt, and wasted by the Indians, your petitioner's husband slain with her son and servants, and your poor petitioner taken captive, afterward Major Waldron was sent to the eastward, with commission to redeem captives, he utterly destroyed the remainder of your petitioner's estate, by cutting of her mills, spoiling her smith shop, and carrying away her iron work, &c. The premises considered by your Excellency, your humble petitioner humbly prays your Excellency's warrant, to bring

the said Major Waldron before your Excellency, to answer her complaint, &c. And your petitioner

shall ever pray, &c.

ELIZABETH ROWDON.

XXXVI.

French Protestants in Narraganset.

By his Excellency.

Whereas complaint hath been made unto me by several of the French Protestants, settled in the Narraganset country, that John Swett, Joseph Reynolds, Henry Reynolds, Thomas Bray and several others have of late, without right or lawful authority, mowed the meadows lying near to their settlements, and have forcibly carried away the grass and hay from thence, by means whereof, they are left destitute of any hay or fodder for their cattle in winter, and if not relieved therein, it will be to their utter ruin. These are, therefore, to authorize and require you, to call before you the persons above named, and such others as you shall find have been concerned in mowing of the said meadow, and what right or title they or either of them have to the said meadow; and unless some particular grant shall be showed to you for the same, you are to cause the said grass or hay, cut off the said meadow as aforesaid, or the like quantity, as can be found in the possession of those, that cut the same, to be seized and secured, and forthwith to make report to me of your proceedings herein, that such further order may be given, as shall be thought necessary. Dated at Boston, the 14th day of July, 1687.

To Captain John Fones, Justice of Peace at King's Province.

By his Excellency.

Upon hearing and examining of the matter in difference between the towns of Greenwich alias Deptford, Kingston alias Rochester, and the French families, lately settled in the Narraganset country, about a parcel of meadow lying near their settlements and appointed for their accommoda-

tion ; but cut and mowed by several persons of both the said Towns, which appears to be done in a violent, forcible manner ; and the hay cut thereupon, being likewise by my order secured and stacked, I do, therefore, for the accommodation of the said parties for the present, till the right thereto can be determined and settled, order and appoint, that all the hay cut and made upon the said meadows as aforesaid, be by the direction of any two Justices of the Peace, forthwith divided into two equal shares or moieties, and that one moiety thereof, be given for the use of John Nicholes, Gyles Pierce and George Vaughan of Greenwich aforesaid, and James Reynolds, James Reynolds, Junr., Henry Reynolds, Joseph Reynolds, Francis Reynolds, John Swett, William Bentley, John Andrew and George Haven of Kingston, share and share alike, who, I am informed live remote and are most wanting thereof. And the other moiety to be left for the use and benefit of the said French Families there, who, being strangers and lately settled and wholly destitute, and have no other way to supply themselves. And all persons therein concerned, are to take notice hereof, and conform themselves thereunto accordingly, until further orders shall be given in said matter. Dated at Boston, the 5th day of August, 1687.

To Major Richard Smith, and Captain John Fones, Justice of the peace, who are to see this order forthwith executed.

XXXVII.

Letter to the Governor of Port Royal, from Sir Edmund Andros.

Complaints being made unto me, that on Friday, the two-and-twentieth of July last, two fishing ketches, belonging to his Majesty's Dominion, and upon their lawful occasions, were taken by a French Man-of-War, said to be bound to your port. One of which ketches, having a French seaman put on board, (now sent you) being separated by foggy weather, and wholly unacquainted with the coast, were in great distress before they could get home for want of their Master. The other ketch and both Mas-

ters not yet returned, which being contrary to the long continued alliance of friendship and late treaty, between the two Crowns ; I have, therefore, to prevent further inconvenience herewith dispatched this gentleman, Captain Francis Nicholson, desiring you will order speedy and effectual redress and reparation of the said complaint. And that none of his Majesty's subjects be for the future any ways disturbed in their fishing or other lawful occasions, expecting your present answer hereto by the said gentleman, I remain, Sir,

Your most humble servant.

Instructions for Captain Francis Nicholson, on his voyage to Port Royal.

Having received my letter for the Governor of Port Royal, you are to repair on board his Majesty's ketch Speedwell, and with the first opportunity of wind and weather, to sail directly for Port Royal aforesaid. You are at your coming into the said port, to put out your colors and give notice by firing three guns, as by the late treaty, which being done, you are to go ashore and deliver my said letter to the Governor of Port Royal aforesaid, letting him know you have orders to receive his answer, which you desire as soon as may be, and unless hindered by wind and weather, or some thing extraordinary, you are not to stay above three days. As you have opportunity going or coming (so as not to hinder your speedy voyage to Port Royal), you are to put into Pemaquid, and view the state and condition of that place and garrison, and give necessary orders as occasion, and make the best of your way to this port again. In which I wish you a good voyage. Given under my hand at Boston the 6th day of August, 1687.

XXXVIII.

Pirates.

By his Excellency.

Forasmuch as I am credibly informed that several persons, suspected to be privateers and pirates, have been lately privately landed and put on shore out of the ketch

Sparrow, whereof Richard Narramore is Master, at several places in and near this his Majesty's Dominion of New England, two whereof were apprehended at Martin's Vineyard, but have broken prison and fled from thence, and whereas, upon the examination of Eliezer Buck, one of the seamen belonging to the said ketch, I have reason to suspect him to have assisted in and contrived the landing of the said persons, and them have and doth abet, countenance and conceal, being deemed pirates and privateers as aforesaid: These are, therefore, in his Majesty's name, to charge and command you to take into your custody, the body of the said Eliezer Buck, and him safely keep in his Majesty's jail, until he shall be from thence delivered by due order of his Majesty's Laws, whereof you are not to fail. Given under my hand and seal in Boston, the 8th day of August, 1687.

To the Sheriff of the County of Suffolk.

By his Excellency.

Forasmuch as John Danson, Mate of the ketch Sparrow, whereof Richard Narramore is Master, hath upon his examination before me confessed, that, for several years, he has been in a private Man of War under the command of one Henley, and hath been in the Red Sea with him, and there plundered and taken what they could from the Mallabars and Arabs. And the said Henley, being deemed and accounted a pirate, I have reason to suspect the said Danson to be guilty of the same. These are, therefore, in his Majesty's name to require and command you to take into your custody, the body of the said John Danson herewith sent you: and him safely keep in his Majesty's jail, until he shall be from thence delivered by due course of law. Whereof you are not to fail. Given under my hand and seal at Boston, the 10th day of August, 1687.

To the Sheriff of the County of Suffolk.

By his Excellency.

Whereas I have received certain information, that several persons, lately brought from the Isle of Theiro* in the ketch

* Eleutheria.

Sparrow, whereof Richard Narramore is Master, have been privately landed and put ashore in several parts and places in and near this Dominion, who are suspected to be privateers or pirates, and that there are several parcels and quantities of gold plate, money and other goods and things on board the said ketch, belonging to the said persons or some of them, which ketch now lies within this harbor. These are therefore in his Majesty's name, to require and command you to make diligent search on board the said vessel for the said gold plate, money and other goods or things, and what you shall there find, you are to cause to be delivered and secured in the hands and charge of the Treasurer of this his Majesty's Dominion, who shall see the same forthcoming, to be disposed of as by law shall be directed. And for so doing, this shall be your warrant. Given under my hand and seal at Boston, the 9th day of August, 1687.

To James Sherlock, Esq., High Sheriff of the County of Suffolk.

XXXIX.

License desired for keeping School.

To his Excellency Sir Edmund Andros, Knt., &c.

The humble petition of Joshua Ratstock of Boston, humbly sheweth to your Excellency,

Whereas the chief inhabitants of the North end of the Town of Boston, have invited your petitioner to take upon him the care and management as Master of a free school, (it being now destituted :) and have, as by their annexed certificate, recommended him to the approbation of the selectmen. But your petitioner, being unwilling to undertake any place of public trust, without your Excellency's favor and directions first had and known. To which your petitioner, as in duty bound, doth humbly refer himself in this matter. And most humbly prays, that your Excellency would be pleased to favor him with a license to instruct youth in the school as above said, in which your petitioner shall make it his care and study, to perform what to his duty in such an undertaking doth belong.

XL.

Petition of Troopers.

To his Excellency, &c.

The humble petition of Isaac Haulsey, one of George Lockhart's Troop, in the behalf of the rest of the Troopers of the said Troop, Sheweth,

That your petitioners having been detached out of the respective Counties of the Province of New York, for his Majesty's service upon the late expedition to Albany, and having served as Troopers under the command of Captain George Lockhart about ten months, and now disbanded without any consideration of pay, further than five pence per diem for provisions, and being informed that his Excellency, Colonel Dongan, late Governor and Council hath established no more than eighteen pence per diem, for such Troopers' pay, so that there will only remain thirteen pence. Your Excellency and this honourable Council being sufficiently sensible of his Majesty's establishment in England, and likewise of the difference of the money, the charge of our fitting out, high rates for clothing, nine shillings for shoeing a horse, the inconveniences and loss of our country affairs, and loss of horses and several other incidental charges: Do, therefore, humbly pray, that your Excellency and the Council will be pleased to take the premises into serious consideration, and allow two shillings and six pence per diem for a trooper, being the same establishment as his Majesty pleased to allow his subjects that serve in the like capacity in our native country, the same establishment being allowed to all our fellow soldiers that served in the said late expedition; and your petitioners shall ever be bound to pray, &c.

Isaac Haulsey.

XLI.

Permit to visit Wrecks.

Sir Edmund Andros, Knt., &c., to Captain Nicholas Inglesby.

Whereas you are appointed to be commander of the Barque Rose, of Boston, now bound to a certain wreck or wrecks, lying and being to windward of his Majesty's Island of Jamaica or other places in the Northern seas, with design to work upon the same, these are to authorize and empower you to take upon you the charge and command thereof accordingly, hereby strictly charging and requiring all the officers and company belonging to said Barque, jointly and severally in their respective employments, to obey you as their commander. And you likewise strictly to observe and execute such orders and directions, as you shall from time to time receive for his Majesty's service during the said voyage. Whereof you are not to fail. Given under my hand and seal at Boston, the 24th August, in the third year of his Majesty's reign, 1687.

XLII.

Commission to visit Wrecks.

Sir Edmund Andros, Knt., &c., to all to whom this shall come.

Whereas the Barque called the Rose, Nicholas Inglesby commander, is by several persons, his Majesty's subjects in this place, fitted and manned for a voyage, intended to be made to the wreck or wrecks lying to windward of Jamaica, or elsewhere in the North seas of America, and have desired my license and permission, that they may proceed on the said voyage. Accordingly these are, therefore, to certify and declare, that the said commander, owners and employers of the said Barque, having given sufficient security to the value of five thousand pounds, for the good deportment of the said company during the voyage, and that within twelve months after the date hereof, they shall and will return to the port of Boston, with all the gold plate, money or other things of value they shall

get at the wreck or wrecks, and there well and truly pay the tenth part thereof, for the use of his Majesty. I have and do by these presents, license, permit, and suffer the said vessel and company, to proceed on the said intended voyage accordingly, and have likewise authorized and empowered the said Nicholas Inglesby, to be commander of the said Barque for and during the voyage aforesaid, it being for his Majesty's service and interest, as well as the benefit and advantage of his Majesty's subjects, the said employers. And desiring you and every of you, to permit and suffer the said Barque to go to, abide and work upon the said wreck or wrecks, and to have, get and enjoy all benefits and advantages there to return to this port again, with what they shall there get and acquire, without any let, hindrance, or molestation whatsoever. In witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal at Boston, the 24th of August, in the third year of his Majesty's reign, 1687.

XLIII.

Captain Inglesby's obligation.

Know all men by these presents, that I, Nicholas Inglesby, commander of the Barque Rose, in behalf of myself and Company belonging to the said vessel, in consideration of the great favor, liberty and countenance we have received from his Excellency, Sir Edmund Andros, on our intended voyage to the wreck or wrecks, do hereby promise, bind and oblige myself, executors and administrators to pay or cause to be paid and delivered unto his Excellency aforesaid, his order or assigns, the full and just quantity and proportion of two forty-sixth parts of all such gold, silver plate, money or other things of value, as we shall get, obtain or acquire in said voyage to the wrecks as aforesaid, after the King's tenths, and the vessel is payed and discharged when they shall be returned from the said voyage. As witness my hand and seal at Boston, the 26th day of August, 1687.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of

JOHN WEST.
P. FERMAN.

XLIV.

Order for S. Wilbore's imprisonment. The paper subsequently spoken of, called in question the late Tax law.

To the Sheriff of the County of Suffolk.

Whereas Shadrack Wilbore, Town clerk of Taunton, hath lately in the name and with the consent of the said Town, written and published a certain scandalous, factious and seditious writing therein, very much reflecting upon and contemning the laws, authority and government of this his Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England. The which writing, upon his examination before his Excellency in Council, he hath confessed and owned. These are, therefore, in his Majesty's name, to require and command you to take into your custody, the body of the said Shadrack Wilbore, and him safely keep in his Majesty's jail, until he shall have answered for the said contempt and misdemeanor, and be from thence delivered by due course of his Majesty's Laws. Whereof fail not. And for so doing, this shall be your warrant. Dated in Boston, the 30th day of August, 1687.

By order in Council.

[Article 21st of the preceding papers, has but little variation from a similar one in 8th vol, 2d series, commencing at p. 181 of our Collections. Still it is thought not amiss to have it, with this difference, as one among the present series of such documents.—*Pub. Com.*]

ORDERS FOR SENDING SIR EDMUND ANDROS TO ENGLAND.

To such as for the time being, take care for preserving the peace and administering the laws of our Colony of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, in America.

WILLIAM R.

Whereas Sir Edmund Andros, Knt., late Governor of our dominion of New England, has been seized by some people in Boston, and is detained under close confinement there, together with Edward Randolph, John Trefrey, and divers others our subjects; who have humbly requested us that they may be either set at liberty, or sent in safe custody into England, to answer before us what may be objected against them: We do hereby will and require, that the said Sir Edmund Andros, Edward Randolph, John Trefrey, and others our subjects, that have been in like manner seized by the said people of Boston, and shall be at the receipt of these our commands, detained there under confinement, be forthwith sent on board the first shipp bound hither, to answer before us what may be objected against them: and that you take care that they be civilly used in their passage from New England, and safely conveyed to our royal presence.

Given at our Court at Whitehall, this thirtieth day of July, 1689, in the first year of our reign.

By his Majesty's command,

NOTTINGHAM.

(With the Royal Seal).

EPISCOPAL MINISTERS' ADDRESS

TO KING WILLIAM.

The humble Address of your Majesty's most loyal and dutiful subjects of the Church of England in Boston, in your Majesty's Territory and Dominion of New England.

Most gracious Soveraigne.

There has been but few years past over our heads, since by the grace and favour of your Majesty's Royal predecessors, wee were delivered from the slavery and thraldome of a most extravagant and arbitrary government which had long been exercised over us, and many others of your Majesty's subjects, under colour and pretence of a Charter, (wherein no part thereof but the name, was ever made use of or regarded), and by that means have been soe happy to enjoy the freedome of divine service and worship, after the manner of the Church of England; which was never, until the vacating of the said Charter, admitted or allowed to any, but all were forced by their penal laws to frequent their meetings and be deprived of the benefit of the Holy Sacraments and other sacred rites; none being admitted thereto, but such as are in Church government and fellowship with them and their children; which does not include the 10th part of your Majesty's subjects in these parts, to the great shame and scandall of the Christian Religion, and hinderance of the propagation thereof.

That though, since wee have had the liberty of our religion, wee have endeavored to carry ourselves void of offence to those that dissent from us, and have, at our own charge, built and erected a convenient Church for the pub-

lique worship and service of God, yet such is the malice of our dissenting neighbours, that wee are become the object of their scorn, and forced to take many affronts and indignityes by them frequently offered to our persons and Religion, which some of their principall Teachers have lately in a printed treaty* charged to be idolatry and Popery.

We have lately, to our great horrour and amazement, been forced to behold a well established and orderly government here subverted and overthrown ; the Governour, several of the Councill, and other principall officers and persons, by force of armes seized and kept under long and hard imprisonment ; your Majesty's forts and garrisons forced out of the hands of those appointed to command them ; your Majesty's standing forces and others, raised and employed for the defence of the country against our Indian and other enemies disbanded, and their officers cruelly seized and imprisoned, and by that means an advantage given to our enemies, who have since destroyed and laid waste a very considerable and goodly part of this your Majesty's territory, with the loss of some hundreds of your subjects ; and many forts and garrisons in those parts, of considerable force and service, which, by the disbanding of the souldiers, were left and defeited ; your Majesty's Frigott here, ordered for the defence and security of the coasts against pyrates and other enemies, dismantled and made wholly unserviceable, whilst pyrates infested the same ; your Majesty's revenue, which amounted to about £12000 per annum, wholly lost ; and all this by a party of pretended zealous and godly men, moved upon no other grounds or reasons, but their owne ill principles, malice, and envy, being more fond and regardful of their former Charter-government, (famous for nothing but their male-administrations, and cruel prosecutions of all persons differing from them in matters of Religion only), than of their duty and allegiance to your Majesty, who have since taken upon them to sett up and exercise their said former Government, and to put in execution the pretended laws made under the same, which are wholly contrary and repugnant to the

* Treatise.

laws and government of your Majesty's realm of England, and to the great grievance and oppression of some thousands of your Majesty's loyall subjects, but more particularly to those who now humbly address your Majesty, who have bin thereby injured and abused both in their civil and religious concernments ; our Church by their rage and fury having been greatly hurt and damnified, and daily threatened to be pulled downe and destroyed ; our Minister hindered and obstructed in the discharge of his duty and office, and wee now put under the burthen of most excessive rates and taxes to support the interest of a disloyal prevailing party amongst us, who, under pretence of the publique good, designe nothing but ruin and destruction to us and the whole countrey.

And as we cannot but from the bottom of our hearts declare our utter abhorrence and dislike of these and all other their seditious and rebellious actings and proceedings, so wee are resolved with patience to undergoe and suffer whatsoever shall be imposed upon us, and to maintaine our duty and allegiance to your Majesty, not doubting that by your Majesty's gracious favour and protection, wee shall be relieved and delivered from the same.

Amongst these our sufferings, wee were greatly comforted, when to our abundant joy and satisfaction, wee received that joyful news of your Majesty's most great and glorious enterprise for the defence and maintenance of the Protestant Religion and interest ; and of your Majesty's happy accession to the Crowne. And since your Majesty has bin graciously pleased to have particular regard to the religion of the Church of England, so wee hope that small branch thereof which hath but lately sprung forth in this remote part of the world, will not want your Majesty's favour and countenance, that it may (as no doubt but by God's blessing it will) grow up and flourish, and bring fruites of religion and loyalty, to the honour of Almighty God, and the promotion and increase of your Majesty's interest and service.

And to that end, we humbly beseech your Majesty, that we may not be left under the anarchy and confusion of government, under which this Country hath so long groaned, but that the same may be ruled and governed by a

Governor and Councill to be appointed by your Majesty, with the advice of an assembly of the people in matters proper for their cognizance, as others your Majesty's plantations, are ruled and governed; with such other libertyes and priveleges as your Majesty shall thinke most proper and conducing to your Majesty's service, and the generall good and welfare of your subjects in the severall parts of this your territory and dominion of New England.

That the great God of Heaven would continue to bless your Majesty with a glorious success in all your undertakings; enable you to vanquish and overcome all your enemies, and give you a long, peaceable, and prosperous raigne over us and all your subjects throughout your realm and dominions; and that they may never be wanting to shew forth their duty and obedience to your Majesty, is and shall be the hearty and continued prayers of your Majesty's dutyfull and loyall subjects, in the name and at the desire of the whole Church.

SAMUELL MILES, M. A.
FRA. FOXCROFT.
SAML. RAUENSCROFT. } *Church Wardens.*

HIGGINSON LETTERS.

[Some loose leaves, which appear to have been torn from an old letter-book, contained the following letters, interspersed with mercantile orders and correspondence. These were kindly presented for publication in our Collections, by the Rev. Charles W. Upham, of Salem, who received them from Daniel Waldo Higginson, Esq., of Cambridge. They are curious, as showing the actual state of Commerce of Salem, in 1700, and as suggesting the advantages which might be anticipated to Salem or Boston, from the importation of East India articles through a mercantile establishment in London. Although the project was not adopted at the time, it is worthy of remark that, nearly an hundred years after, the enterprise, *by a direct communication* with India, rendered Salem the most prosperous commercial mart in New England.

The letters will, also, give some interesting particulars of the family of the Rev. John Higginson, son and successor in the ministry, of the venerable Francis Higginson, first Minister of Salem. He died December 9th, 1708, in his 93d year, eight years after the date of the last letter. John, his oldest son, by whom most of the letters were written, was a respectable merchant in Salem; and is named with just commendation in the letter of his father; to which may be added, he was long a member of the Governour's Council. He deceased March 23d, 1720, aged 73. Nathaniel, to whom the letters were addressed, was born at Guilford, Connecticut, October 11th, 1652; and was educated at Harvard College, where he graduated in 1670. He went to England in 1674; and was with Lord Wharton about seven years, as steward and tutor to his children. He was employed in the mint of the Tower, 1681; and went, 1683, in the Company's service to Fort St. George, in the East Indies; was member and secretary of the Council, and afterwards Governor of the Factory at the fort. He married Elizabeth Richards in 1692; returned to England, with his wife and children, in 1700, and established himself as a merchant in London, where he died in 1708, the same year with his Father. Thomas (another son) went to England; learnt the goldsmith's trade; came home; embarked for Africa, and was never heard of. Francis went to his uncle at Kirby Stevens in England; was educated at the University at Cambridge there; and died of the small pox in London, aged 24. Henry was brought up as a merchant; went to Barbadoes as Factor; and there died of small pox in 1685.

Pub. Com.]

To Sir JOSIAH CHILD, *Knight, Governour of the East India Company, London.*

[*Salem, N. E.*], 18*th July*, 1692.

Much honoured Sir.

I make bold to request a favour of you, that you would be pleased to send the inclosed letter to my Brother, Mr. Nathaniel Higginson, who, I understand, is in your service at Fort St. George in the East Indies, and has there received many marks of your favour. He went out of England in the year 1683; and, since his departure from England, we have had but one letter from him, which was on his first arrival there; and suppose that his letters have, some way or other, miscarried.

I pray your Honour that if any letters come from him, directed either to my honoured Father or myself, you would be pleased to send them to us; or if no letters come to hand, that you would be pleased to inform me, by a line, how it is with him;—which will greatly oblige your Honour's humble servant at command, in any thing I am capable of, to the utmost of my power.

JOHN HIGGINSON.

To Mr. Nathaniel Higginson.

18*th July*, 1692.

Dear Brother.

I have sent you many letters since your arrival at the East Indies, but have not been so happy as to receive any from you.* I therefore venture these lines under cover, to Sir Josiah Child, in hope they will find the way to you by his means.

* The letter referred to in the preceding, must be one to his Father.

I long to hear of your welfare ; and trust that you will, by the first opportunity, afford me a line thereof.

New England is much altered since you left it. Through mercy our honoured Father enjoys a good measure of health and strength ; being yet able to preach his turn every sabbath. He is now seventy-six years old. Myself, wife and five children, Mary, John, Sarah and Elizabeth, are in good health. Brother Thomas lives at Guilford. Sister Anna, at Salem. Our brother Wharton died in London about two years since, as I suppose you have heard. His estate, being much entangled, I doubt there will be nothing left for his two daughters, Sarah and Bethiah. I hope, if God bless you, you will remember them in time.

Dear Brother, let not the distance of place be a means to make us forget each other. Remember the good days and reciprocal affections we once enjoyed ; and let me be again happy in your company here. Our Father much desires to see you again, if it may be, before he dies.

Thus commending you to the protection and blessing of the Almighty,

I remain your ever loving Brother,

JOHN HIGGINSON.

From Rev. John Higginson of Salem, to his son Nathaniel.

* * * * [I learn by your] letter, that if the Lord please to continue your life, and that you meet with no extraordinary losses, you intended to send something more. This deserves my acknowledgment and approbation ; and I pray God to direct you in the time and quantity, &c., which I leave to yourself ; only I think meet to inform you, how it may be done to the best advantage, to attain the end of your liberality, when God shall give you an opportunity to bring your intentions into execution. Considering my age, and the need of your brother Thomas, and sister Doliver, I have taken a special and sufficient care of making provision for them ; viz., whereas there was almost five hundred pounds of arrears due to me from the towne since

1686, and I saw no hope of receiving it in my time, about two years ago, I gave it wholly back to the towne, upon condition they would provide a sufficient maintenance for your sister during her life, and something for Thomas, if he returned from Arabia, whither he was gone with privateers, contrary to my mind and his owne promise. This proposition, in a general towne meeting, the towne accepted, and engaged to perform the condition, all which is recorded. Also I had been at great charge to maintain her children, and put them out prentices to learn trades, whereby they may get a livelihood when growne up. So that there is no need of supply in respect of those forenamed. But by this means I have wronged your brother John, and his, who might have recovered, at least some of the arrearages, when the towne might be in a better condition. And, therefore, if the Lord please to give you ability and opportunity to bring your intentions into execution, I recommend unto you, in a special manner, the case of your brother John and his five children. By his singular prudence and industry, he had attained a competent estate ; but by the misery of these times, he has met with great losses, by the French, &c. ; and so put out of his way as to be disenabled from making any use of the fishing trade ; and been worsted in his estate, I believe, above a thousand pounds : and yet he is a Major, and a Justice of the Peace, and the shew of public occasions lies much upon him. And divers of his children are growne up to above twenty, and need something to be given to them, to begin the world withal. He is a worthy good man, and well accepted of all men, and the staff and stay of my old age. I doubt not of your good affection for him, and therefore am the more free in making knowne his case to you. If you should do that which may help to support and help him, I doubt not but it will be acceptable to God, and honourable and comfortable to yourself, and a testimony of the continuance of your brotherly love to him and his family, who is the only one that is like to bear up the name of Higginson with honour in New England. Also, if you should remember your sister Wharton's two daughters to help forward their shop-keeping, for they keep a small shop at Boston ; and are like to continue as ancient maids, I know not how long, Sarah being 25 or 26 years old. And,

if you should say as you did before, "if my Father or Mother be living"—I daily wait for my change, yet know not how long I may live; my vitals being sound, and I can yet preach to be heard on the sabbath and lectures; and when I fail, Mr. Noyes supplies. Mr. Bradstreet, our late Governour, died lately in Salem, aged 95; some have outlived 100; and many have lived to above 80 in this pure and healthful aire. But *what is our life? It is but a vapour that appears for a little while, and then vanishes away.* The Lord make us wise to make and keep our peace with him, that we may be in readiness for his coming to call us away to himself, that we may be ever with Christ, which is far better than to be here.

It would be very acceptable to me, if, when you have leisure, you would write more largely and particularly something more concerning yourself: what wife you have married, a native, or &c., how long you are to stay there; what way of worship at the Fort, and at St. Thomas; whether any of the Apostle Thomas' Christians there; whether the inhabitants have left the custom of their wives' dying with their husband; whether the Dutch christianizing Ceylon goes forward; and what has become of Bezaliel Sherman's wife and child.

Your mother willed me to informe you, that she accepted of your kindness, as much as if she had received what you sent her. Your sister Higginson prayed me to tell you, that she thinks you have forgotten them. Mr. Noyes remembers his love to you. He is 50, but sickly. By living single, he has gotten an estate; but there are above 80 persons of his kindred.

Since the Lord has taken your Uncle Whitfield, I have received a letter from Mr. Collet, to whom you wrote, and he hath written to me, offering in his kindness to convey my letters to you. As you joined him with your uncle Whitfield, may you not do well to joine your couzin Whitfield Hayler, with him? You would do well to write to your brother John.

* * *

A copy of a Letter from my Father to Mr. Matthew Collet, in London.

7. 6. '97.

Good Mr. Collet.

I received your loving letter, with my son's letter inclosed; and do, in the first place, give thanks unto God for moving your heart to show such a kindness of the Lord to me and mine, as you do express in your letter, and then I also give thanks unto yourself, as an instrument of his goodness.

My good brother Whitfield was such a man; with whom I had a correspondence for above forty years together, and he never failed me. Now the Lord hath taken him unto himself, he hath raised up you as a friend in his stead. And whereas you are pleased to offer your helpfulness in conveying letters to my son, I do with all thankfulness accept your kind offer, and intreat you to send the inclosed letter to him with your owne. I have left it unsealed, that you may see the contents of it, because you may possibly be some way instrumental in time, to convey, not only his letters, but what he speaks of that he intends to do, if the Lord will.

Sir, I pray you, as you have begun, you will go on, and let me expect another letter from you when you see the time; directing it, in my absence, to my son John, as you did this.

Sir, I pray you present my best respects, love, and service to good Mr. How, your father-in-law, with my thankfulness to him for his writing to my son. His kinswoman, Mrs. Brown, married in this towne, is very well. She is a pious, good woman; much exercised with soul-trouble. She doth much good to the poor, and is a friend to Ministers.

So I commend you to the grace of God, in Christ Jesus; and rest

Your's unfeignedly,

John Higginson.

Salem 20. 6. '97.

Dear Brother Nathaniel.

Whilst you continued in England, I was often favoured with letters from you; but, since you went to India, I have not received one from you, though I have sent many to you-ward, but cannot tell whether you have received any of them: but in May last, my honoured Father received a letter from you, under cover from Mr. Matthew Collet; wherein you advised that you had sent a Bill of £180 sterling, (drawn by Captain Bluet on the owners of the ship, which Mr. Collet informs was on bottomry, and by the ship being taken, the money is lost); for the use of my honoured Father and family; and, in case of my Father's decease before it arrived, you ordered myself and Mr. Noyes to distribute the same to our Mother-in-law, if living, £30 of New England; the rest divided, so as that my sister Ann, and each of her children, and each of the children of my sister Wharton, and my brother Thomas, may have an equal share; viz. so many as shall be living when it is received,—only desiring that sister Wharton's oldest daughter, if living, may have a double share to any of the rest. The which order, when Mr. Noyes saw, he said you had not therein ordered anything to me nor mine, nor could it be so understood, but it must be only to the above-named;—which, I suppose, you did not intend, though it was not fully expressed, for my owne part.

In the year 1689, when the war first broke out, I had obtained a comfortable estate, being as much concerned in the fishing trade as most of my neighbours. But, since that time, I have met with considerable losses; and trade has much decayed. Of sixty odd fishing catches belonging to this towne, but about six are left. I believe that no towne in this Province has suffered more by the war than Salem.

I have had seven children; of whom five are living, viz., Mary, John, Nathaniel, Sarah, and Elizabeth. Mary and John are married, and begin to live in a hard world. Mary's husband has gone to sea, eighteen months since.

Not heard of, he is supposed to be lost. Mary lives with me. John has one child of above a year old, named Elizabeth. He married at twenty years of age. I hope he will do well. He is Lieutenant to one of our companies of soldiers. Our honoured Father has been at great charges with sister Ann Dolliver and her children, brother Thomas, and sister Wharton's children; and will leave but little; by which means I am made a younger brother.

I am glad to hear that you are suited with a wife; I hope a good wife, which is a good thing; (I have found it so); and that God has blest you with two children, and pray that He would make them a blessing to you. Present my kind and hearty love and respects to your wife, though unknown. My dear wife presents the same to you both; and, if you were within her reach, she would tell you that you are not the same Nathaniel, the Israelite, she once took you to be. We often talk of you, but cannot hear from you. My children all present their humble respects to yourself and lady and young ones. My youngest child living, is twelve years old.

Dear Brother, I request you to give me a particular account of your circumstances; and I hope you do not intend to spend all your days in India, but will return into England, and so into New England. We want such men; and now you have gotten you an estate, the business is to contrive how to lay it out for the glory of God and the good of yourself and yours; which, I conceive, may be done as well in New England as any where. We yet enjoy the free liberty of the Gospel; blessed be God for it! I pray God that you and I may mind the one thing needful; and may not be cumbered with the honours, profits, and pleasures of the world, so as to lose our interest in Christ and eternal glory; for to lose our souls in gaining the world, will prove a bad bargain. So leaving you to the protection and blessing of the Almighty, I remain, &c.

JOHN HIGGINSON.

To Mr. Matthew Collet.

Salem, 20th August, 1697.

Sir,

I have a Brother who is President of Fort St. George in the East Indies, with whom, I understand you have a correspondence. Whilst he was in England, I had frequent letters from him almost by every ship ; but since he left England, I have not received one letter from him ; which I have much wondered at ; but suppose his letters have miscarried some way or other. I have several times heard of him by the way of Barbadoes, from the East India ships that have arrived there, that he has gained a great estate. My Brother, in his letter to my Father of 11th June, 1695, advises him that he had sent a Bill drawn by Captain Bluet on the owners of his ship for £180 sterling, payable to yourself and my uncle Whitfield ; and desired you to remit the same to my father ; but does not say it was on bottomry. You advise that it was, and that the ship being lost, the money is also lost. I much wonder that my Brother should run such an adventure on such an occasion ; but, if it be so, we must submit to the sovereign pleasure of God. I hope that you advised him thereof. He did also say, that if he did not meet with extraordinary loss, he would send more. Now, Sir, I request you please to send the inclosed letters to him by some safe hands, and encourage him to send something as a token of his love to us, in some safer way than the last. And, Sir, if in any thing I may be serviceable to yourself here, you may freely command him who is

Your humble servant,

JOHN HIGGINSON.

To Mr. Nathaniel Higginson.

16. 4. 1699.

Dear Brother Nathaniel.

It is now sixteen years since you left England, from whence, while you were there, I had often refreshing letters from you. But now, what climate have you got into that makes you forget your Father's house? I have not received one line from you since you left England, though you have had so many opportunities by England, Holland, Barbadoes. What is it that we have offended you in, that you will not afford one line in so many years? Have the honours, profits, &c., of the world quite swallowed you up?

Our honoured Father is yet alive, and in a good measure of health. He preaches his turn on sabbaths and lectures.

The late war with France and the Indians, which held almost ten years, has greatly impoverished this town; by which means my Father's salary has been much abated, and he much straitened in providing for sister Ann, her children, Thomas, and sister Wharton's children; by which I am made a younger brother. Sarah Wharton is married to one John Cotta. Bethiah remains single. The war has also damnified me, not only by losses, but by being put out of a way. I have had a pretty large family of my own, and relations; and the several places I have held in civil and military concerns, have taken up much of my time, and not been advantageous to my estate. I have now living five children, viz., Mary Weld, who has been twice married, John, married to Hannah Gardner, and has two children, Elizabeth and John, so that there are four of that name in a line now living. Nathaniel who is nineteen years old, is a prentice at Mr. B. Browne's, Sarah, who is to be married the next week, to Nathaniel Hathorne; Elizabeth the youngest, is fifteen years old. The marrying and settling my children, has much abated my quick stock; though I have an estate in house and land, &c.

I hear that you have attained to a very considerable estate, some say £300,000, some 2, some one. However, if it be more than you daily use for your advantage, you would do the part of a Brother, to lend me some part of it, which would cause me to live better in the world, nor do yourself nor yours any hurt. Remember what Joseph did for his father's house. I pray you to find out some way to send me a letter, with an account of your health and concerns, and when we may expect your return to us. With mine, my wife's, children and grandchildren's kind love and respects to yourself, and your good wife and children, I pray God to bless you all, and to give you of the dew of heaven and fulness of the earth, and remain, &c.

J. HIGGINSON.

A copy of Father HIGGINSON'S *Letter.*

My dear and beloved Son,

I received a letter from you dated 1695, wherein you informed me that you was married and had two children; and that you had sent £180 to me and other relations here. Though it pleased God to dispose of it that it was taken by the French, your love and kindness in it were no less real than if we had received it. It is the Lord that gives and takes as he pleases.

Having a probable opportunity of sending, I could not omit a few lines to inform you that all your relations here are in *statu quo prius*, and myself enjoying in some respects better health than formerly; enabled, through mercy, to preach on the sabbath and lecture-days as formerly, and my voice (they say), is heard well in our great Meeting-House.

The French and Indian war, with other calamities, have greatly impoverished, diminished and brought low New England; and the people, in a way of contribution, paying but a half so much as they did, I and my family, and especially your brother John, by extraordinary losses, have been brought low and kept so; thus I have little left to give

when I die. Before your letter came, when, being sick, and thinking I should die, I gave back to the Town between 4 or £500 arrearages due to me (by the law and agreement of rating), upon condition of their maintaining Anna during her life, and doing something for Thomas, if he returned from his wandering. This was settled, and recorded by a vote of the Town, being accepted by them, and no recalling it. The truth is, I had an expectation of something from you, that might have been a supply to your brother John especially; and it did not a little trouble me that you did not at all write to him, nor send any thing to him; whereas you two brothers had rejoiced one in another in your younger time. He is a worthy man; of singular prudence in managing affairs; a Major; a Justice of Peace; often chosen a Representative; frequently employed in arbitrations; and his family of five children are grown up, and neither he nor I can do that for them that the case doth require. I doubt not but you are and will be spirited as Joseph towards your Brethren; and that your bowells do yearn towards your own flesh and blood; having begun to show it already in that which you sent, and in that which you expressed in your letter that you intended more, if the Lord pleased to preserve your estate from extreme losses, &c. And though I do not believe half of what is reported by credible persons concerning your estate, yet I cannot but believe that God has given so much as I and all your relations could not have expected; and must ascribe it to the mere good pleasure of God that you may be enabled to serve God and man in a higher way than others, and to enjoy the fruit of your labor and to be helpful to your relations in such a manner and measure as their need and case do require, and as may be acceptable to God's honour, to yourself, a comfort to them, and of good report amongst all.

We are informed that the new East India Company being begun, you are at liberty to return. When it pleases God to bring you safe to London, either your brother John or one of his sons may go and visit you there, if you give them encouragement so to do: Only, they say, you will stay awhile there to order and settle things.

My daily prayers to God for you are that he would bless

you and yours with all spiritual and temporal blessings, for soul and body, for this life and the life to come. So I commend you to the grace of God in Christ Jesus, and rest

Your loving father J. HIGGINSON.

20th June, 1699.

To the same.

Salem, 3d October, 1669.

Dear Brother Nathaniel.

Now I have before me your kind letter dated 26th of September, 1698, which came to my hand on the 3d of August, '99; by which I am sensible that there is a possibility of communication between us; upon the reading whereof I was much rejoiced to learn of your health, and that God has continued your life, and blessed you with a good wife, four children, and other blessings; and it has conceived some secret hopes in me that I and our honored father may be made happy in the enjoyment of your good company in New England; which I pray God to grant in his due time.

Dear brother, I believe you may live as happily in New England as in any part of the world; and may have more respect showed you here than in England; there being there many that will be your superiors, and many your equals; but it will not be so here; and if you have a supplie of estate, more than may be necessary to improve in trade, you may here lay it out to good advantage in housen and lands at Boston, which, in suitable places, will yield ten per cent.; and in unimproved lands, which do often increase in value considerably more than the interest of money at six per cent., which is the interest allowed here by law.

The account you give about your wife and children is very acceptable to me; that she is an English woman, and came of so good a stock. Tell that dear soul, your good wife, that, if she will come and live among us, we will

love her and hers affectionately; treat her civilly; serve her heartily. We reckon that we have as good, sociable, civil, honest women in our country as in any part of the world; and she will find them so, if she will come and try. What you propose of living in Boston and managing a wholesale trade of East India goods, I approve of, as best for you. That is a place of great trade, and all the neighboring colonies are mostly supplied from thence. All sorts of calicoes, aligers, remwalls, muslin, silks for clothing and linings; all sorts of drugs proper for the apothecaries, and all sorts of spice, are vendible with us; and the prices of them alter much according as they are plenty or scarce. In the late war time, all East India goods were extremely dear. Muslins of the best sort, plain, striped, and flowered, were sold for £10 per piece, and some more. Pepper, 3s. per lb., nuts,* 10s. per lb., cloves, 20s., mace, 30s.; but now are abated about a quarter part in value. Some of the China ware, toys, and lacquer ware will sell well, but no great quantity. As for ambergris, we often have it from the West Indies, and it is sold for about 3 per oz. For musk, bezoar, pearl, and diamond, I believe some of them may sell well, but I understand not their value. And besides East India goods, you may do well to bring some European goods, of which all things necessary for the comfort of man's life, and the carrying on the fishing trade will turn to account;—except those things which are produced here.

I am sorry to hear that there is such a crew of pirates in your parts; and do doubt† that what you intimate of New York, Providence, and the West Indies is too true. Frederick Phillips of York, it is reported, has had a private trade to Madagascar for near twenty years, and it is said has attained an estate of 100,000 pounds. But I assure you the government of this place has always been severe with all such; and, at this time, there are many men in our gaol for piracy; namely, Captain Kidd, who went from England with a ship and commission to take pirates, but turned pirate himself, and robbed many ships in the East Indies, and thence came into the West Indies, and there disposed of much of his wealth; and at last came

* Nutmegs. † i. e. apprehend.

into these parts with some of his stolen goods; who was here seized, and some of his men, and goods, who are in irons, and wait for a trial. And there was one Bradish, a Cambridge man, who sailed in an interloper bound for India, who, in some part of the East Indies, took an opportunity, when the captain and some of the officers were on shore, to run away with the ship, and came upon our coast, and sunk their ship at Block Island, and brought much wealth ashore with them; but Bradish, and many of his company, and what of his wealth could be found, were seized and secured. But Bradish, and one of his men, broke prison and run away amongst the Indians; but it is supposed that he will be taken again.

It is reported that the King has sent several men-of-war into the East Indies, to secure those coasts therewith. If so, I hope that you will have a safe convoy for England.

As for Mr. Humphrey Osland, soon after I received your letter I went to Charlestown; and as I entered the town, I enquired for him of old and young, but could not hear that ever any such man had lived there. I went over to Boston, and enquired there, but no news of him; but, as I returned back, I met with one who knew him, and told me that he lived at New Cambridge. I wrote to him, and he sent me the enclosed letter to his sister, which I hope will give her the satisfaction she desires.

And finally, dear brother and sister, I, my wife, and children, and all your friends, relatives, and acquaintance, do earnestly and heartily desire to see you and enjoy your good company here in New England; and pray God, and you, it may be so.

Dear brother, you had your education here, and you do owe some service to your country. Come, and pay it. It is possible you may see your aged father, before he dies.

* * * *

To Mr. MATTHEW COLLET, *linen-draper, at the Artichoke, on Corn-hill, London.*

3. 8. '99

Sir,

I received your letter of the 6th of June last, with a welcome, inclosed, letter from my Brother; and return you my hearty thanks for your care and trouble therein. And because I am sensible that, besides your trouble, there is cost in the postage of letters, I have sent you a piece of Arabian gold to pay the charge thereof, and I do further request the favor of you, that you would please to forward the inclosed packet of letters to my brother in India. He has informed my father, that he has sent £100 to yourself to be conveyed to him, the which, if it be not already invested, please to lay it out, and send it, according to my brother's direction, in the goods following:

£5,0,0	2 pls. black crape of 40s. and 50s. first cost.
6,0,0	4 pls. worsted damask, lively colors.
5,0,0	6 pls. toys, lively colors.
4,0,0	2 pls. silk stuffs.
10,0,0	£10 in round thread hollands of a 2 per ell.
16,0,0	5 C weight of fishing lines, of 12 threads, 40 fathoms, weighing a 25 per doz., which usually cost a 6d—7d per lb.
10,0,0	£10 in colored, striped and flowered calico.
15,0,0	£15 in bl. castors, 5 to 19 and bl. felts; in the mode.
5,0,0	6 lb. cloth colored sewing and stick silk.
20,0,0	£20 in nails sorted, small sort in one cask.
96,0,0	
4,0,0	£4 in black fine linen, ordinary for mourning.

Please to take care in the buying them up that all may e good of the sort, and well bought.

Sir, the care and trouble herein will greatly oblige him ho will at all times be ready to serve you to his power; nd remains Your humble Servant, J. H.

A Copy of Mr. NOYES'S *letter to* NATHANIEL HIGGINSON.

3. 8. '99.

Honored Sir,

When I first heard of your going to the East Indies, I was smitten with sorrow something like that when our friends depart out of this world; and I am convinced it was not without cause,—for you are nearly under the earth, and for a long time I have comforted myself in vain with respect to your resurrection. At your departure your reverend father told me you thought to hide yourself from the evil of the times for the space of seven years, and then returne; but "he must not expect to see you returne, for he could not expect to live seven years;" but though through the grace of God he hath more than doubled the time, as if he must see you before he die:—and why not, as well as Isaac was visited by his son Jacob after more than twice seven years absence. When his apprenticeships were out, neither his wives, nor his children, nor his estate hindered him; he must needs be gone from Padan Aram, because his soul longed after his father's house. Sir, you know how the lord of Egypt expressed his affection to his father on every occasion, when he knew the good old man was yet alive, and how his father must needs see him before he died. I know the same fatherly affection works strongly upon your aged and honored father, and I do not think but that the same filial affection works in one of your grace and good nature. You have no father-in-law, no Laban, to detain you; no brother incensed to essay to terrifie you from returning as Jacob had; but a loving brother, Lieutenant Colonel John Higginson, one of his Majesty's Justices of the peace, that bears your absence with much impatience, and doth most earnestly desire and long for your returne, and so do his virtuous wife and children. Moreover, it is the unanimous desire of your contemporaries, your old friends and acquaintance, amongst whom I reckon myself, though otherwise very inconsiderable, yet a passionate lover of yourself; and I pray the Lord of heaven to incline your heart to meditate a returne, and by his wise, gracious, and

powerful providence to compass it for you. And if it should please God, who orders the bounds of all our habitations, to effect it, I believe it will be as joyful a meeting as ordinarily the best relations and friends have upon earth. Sir, it would be an honor and ornament to Salem to have so honorable and worthy a person well settled in it; and a peculiar gratification to your relations, —father, mother, brother, and to myself if it should so happen. But if that should not suit with your inclinations, or occasions, or grandeur, Boston may, which is much more populous, rich, and stately, than when you left it, and a very considerable place for shipping and merchandizing. And if that should not suit neither, but you should count that would be but to go out of one India to another, yet surely London will. And, for my owne part, if you were in the Christian world, I would labor to be content, though I am not thoroughly acquainted with the circumstances of the present place of your abode as to religion and the advantages and disadvantages yourself and yours have for your souls; yet I fear you dwell in Meshec, or at least sojourn in the tents of Kedar, which David counted a woful thing. If you imitate, as I doubt not you do, that godly man, you cannot but desire to lay your young ones nigh the altar of God, and to dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of your life. I know not what further to add; but shall rest in the will of God. Perhaps I have been too bold. If I have, let my kindness excuse my boldness. If there be more obstacles in the way of your return, than I am aware of, and it may not be, I conclude all my desire in this, that God of his grace would make us meet for a joyful meeting in the kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, to whom, with the Father be glory forever.

This, with the offers of my service to yourself and lady and children, whom God preserve and bless,—I remaine

Your friend and humble servant,

Nicholas Noyes.

Fort St. George, 6 Oct. 1699.

Dear Brother,

In February last I wrote you under cover to Mr. Collet, the copy whereof I have not, and by misfortune, a letter which I received from you since is mislaid, so that I cannot answer it.

Finding some difficulties in the station wherein the Honorable Company had placed me, I requested them to appoint a successor and to give me leave to continue in their service in a lower station, having then thoughts of staying in India. But upon the coming of a new President in July 1698, and the controversys in England rising high about the East India trade, I resolved to return to England, having in the September following quitted all public employment that I might be at leisure to settle my affairs and clear all accounts in India, and indeed designed to go this season: but the ship is so small that she cannot afford accommodation for my large family; and therefore I am forced to stay till February next, when, with God's leave, I shall go and at present foresee nothing to obstruct.

I have formerly acquainted you that I married Elizabeth, the daughter of one Mr. John Richards, who came out for India eighteen years ago to be chief of Ballasow factory in Bengal. He brought his wife and two daughters with him, but died on the passage out, and his wife and one daughter died in Bengal in a few years after their arrival, and my wife is the only surviving person of the family.

We were married in May 1692, and have five children. Elizabeth, born 3 December 1693, Richards, 18th May 1695, Nathaniel, 30 May 1696, Sarah, 2 December 1697, and John, 23 August 1699, and through God's mercy all well.

My wife was, when a very young orphan, placed under the care of Mrs. Mary Large, who initiated into her the principles of piety, and caused her to learn the Malabar, Genhow and Portuguese languages very perfectly. Mrs.

Large took my eldest daughter from me when very young, and hath taken such care and pains in her instruction, that before five years old she could read well in the Bible, which she hath read over the greatest part, and upon reading an historical chapter in English can give a very good account of the contents in the Portuguese language.

My wife has an inclination to go to New England, and my own longing desire to see my friends makes me think of it often; but I cannot resolve till I come to England, where I shall refer the determination to the direction of God's providence, which hath hitherto carried me through many difficulties. But there are some circumstances, arising from the Company's business, whereof I can foresee, but have some reason to doubt the issue. It would be in vain to trouble you with particulars.

I have gone through the most considerable employment in the Company's service in India, and have had opportunities enough for gaining a great estate, which, though I have not, yet I thank God I have a good one, as I account it, because gained by God's blessing upon my laborious diligence, without indirect courses, and I have enough for me.

I have acquainted you so particularly with my circumstances, because I believe you desire to know how it is with me, and that you may join with me in acknowledging the goodness of God who led me out from my father's house with my staff; and I trust in the same goodness that he will lead me safe back, and give me opportunity of doing some good to my relations.

And I am particularly solicitous, how I may be serviceable to yourself. In order to which I have desired you (in my last letter as I remember) to give me a particular account of the trade of New England, both to England and other parts; and if you can give an encouraging proposal, I shall readily do all that lies in my power to prosecute it in such manner as will be most for your advantage, by giving you consignments not only from myself but others, whom I can probably engage to join with me. I therefore desire to be satisfied in the following questions.

1. How a stock of five or ten thousand pounds may be employed.

2. Whether two ships can be employed constantly between England and New England with that stock, and of what burthen.

3. How many trips can one ship make between England and New England, and what are the proper seasons of voyaging.

4. How may Barbadoes, Jamaica, Virginia or other places in the West Indies, or in Europe, be made use of in carrying on trade between England and New England, and please to name the correspondents whom you have employed or known in any such places.

5. Whether Salem or Boston be the best port for trade.

6. If Boston, whether you can manage business there while your residence is in Salem.

7. List of goods usually imported and exported to and from New England, with their prices and quantity vendible or procurable.

I should be glad to meet your answer in England, where I may probably arrive in July or August 1700. If you receive my former letter, I hope you will send a speedy answer, having ordered my attorneys in England, William Halsen, Esq. (who now goes home from hence) and Mr. Matthew Collett to open and peruse your letters, and if they find encouragement from your advice, and if they can continue to consign any sum, not exceeding one thousand pounds, to you for my account; which, if they shall do before my arrival in England, I desire you to make as quick teturns as you can possibly.

You have never advised me that I remember, how you have educated your children. If you could meet with an opportunity of sending one of them who hath been bred a merchant and unmarried, so as to meet me in England in July or August 1700, I should be glad to see him, and, if it please God to carry me safe thither, I shall endeavor to put him into some business suitable to his capacity and experience, if you shall give me power to dispose of him as opportunity shall offer. It seems probable that the two East India Companies will unite into one, in which case I think I could procure his going in their service according to his capacity, or possibly send him to India on a single voyage to China, whither the Company do yearly send a ship or two with factors, who go and return with the ship, there being no settlement in China. The latter (of voyaging) would be the best employment that I know for a young man.

There is no great dependence to be placed on projects, at so great a distance, because we cannot know what accidents may intervene and prevent, and indeed it would be a presumption in me to promise things that are so little in my own power. I can only promise that if he comes and if I live, I will do my part, exerting all that is in my power to provide an employment for him; and if that fail in England, if I come to New England, will bring him with me.

The unhappy miscarriage of Thomas has much troubled me. I have never heard any thing of him in India, though I have met with several who have been taken by pirates and returned or escaped. There are newly arrived four men-of-war (now in this road) who have brought an embassador from the new Company to the Mogul, and in their passage out touched at Madagascar, but met with no pirates. They have left the embassador ashore at Melchlepalam (on this coast) and are proceeding in quest of pirates, being sent

* * * *

[The remainder is lost.]

Salem, 29th August, 1700.

Dear Brother,

Three days since, I received your letter of *6th October,* 1699, from Fort St. George, which gives me much hope that I shall once again be made happy in the enjoyment of your good company; or at least, that you will come within reach of my pen. I hope by this time, you, with your dear wife and children, are safely arrived in England. I thank you for the particular account you have given me of your circumstances, which is very acceptable to me. Tell your dear wife I hold myself much obliged to her, that she has an inclination to come to New England, which I hope is a good presage of her arrival here.

I sent a large packet of letters to Mr. Collet, to be com-

municated to you; which he advised he had sent away in January last; and because I suppose you will not meet with them, I have enclosed here a copy of my father, Mr. Higginson's, (not of my owne) letter. Others, as Mr. Sewall's, Peter Thacher's, and Major Sewall's, I had no copy of; that you may in part see how desirous we are of enjoying you here.

I now come to answer your question: 1st, you say "may a stock of 5 or 10 thousand pounds be employed? I answer, the trade of New England is large. We trade to all parts where the law doth not prohibit. Our principal commodities are dry merchandise, cod-fish fit for the markets of Spaine, Portugal, the Straits, also refuse dry fish, mackerel, lumber, horses and provision for the West Indies; the effects whereof mostly return for England. The returnes made directly hence for England, are chiefly sugar, molasses, cotton-wool, logwood and brazilla-wood; for which, we are beholden to the West Indies. Of our owne produce, we have a considerable quantity of whale and other fish-oyles, whale bone, furrs, deer, elk and bear skins; which are usually sent for England. We have also silver, lead, and copper mines; but, for want of artists, there has been little got out of them. In all or any of which, a man may employ his money.

2*d.* "Whether 2 ships can be employed constantly between England and New England with that stock, and of what burden?" I answer; 2 ships may be employed with the stock of a 100 tons or more; but here is much shipping, freight very low, and it is a query whether you had not better ship upon freight, than either hire or owne vessels. The factor here may always have freight when he can provide it.

3*d.* "How many trips can one ship make, in one year, between England and New England; and what are the proper seasons of voyaging?" I answer, It is possible for a ship to make two trips in a year, but it is seldom done. The season for voyaging is almost all the year; the dead of winter most difficult to come on this coast; the best time between April and November.

4*th.* "How may Barbadoes, Jamaica, Virginia, and other places in the West Indies or in Europe, be made use of in carrying on a trade between England and New England?

Please to name the correspondent whom you have employed, or known, in any such place." I answer, that Barbadoes, Jamaica, Virginia, and other places in the West Indies, are very proper to be made use of in making returns for England, of their commodities, the more advantageous than direct from hence. For instance, molasses has been this year at 12*d* a gallon, besides the charge of casks, &c., in Barbadoes; and much molasses, which has been shipped of hence for England, cost here 2*s* a gallon, besides other charges of commission, cooperage, &c. The freight from Barbadoes being much the same as from hence, I judge it more advantageous to have returns of that kind from Barbadoes, than from New England; sugar and cotton are much the same. Places proper in Europe to make returns to England from, and are much improved for that end, from hence, are Bilboa, Cadiz, Oporto, and the Streights; where the markets are variable, according to the plenty or scarcity of the commodities. For correspondents in Barbadoes, I have had business with Mr. William Adams and his brother Conrad Adams. William served his time in this towne with Major Browne; has now married a good fortune in Barbadoes, and understands business well, and is a faithful man. His brother Conrad lived some time in this towne, is now at Barbadoes, a worthy man. If any thing considerable should be sent that way, it may be best to consign them in partnership for France and Leward Islands. I know none there; but here is one John Bradstreet, son of Doctor Samuel Bradstreet, about 24 years old, who served his time with Moses Byfield and Mico; who has an estate in Jamaica, and is going this fall to settle there, whom I would commend to you, if you have occasion to send thither. At Jamaica, are sugar and log-wood for returns, and other things; peices of eight, &c., for Bilboa, Couzin Hayler can inform you.

5*th*. "Whether Salem or Boston be the best place for trade?" Answer, Boston, in some respects, Salem in others. Both well improved, may do well.

6*th*. "If Boston, whether you can manage business at Boston while you reside at Salem?" For answer thereunto, I would propound to your consideration, that I have a son whose name is Nathaniel, now at prentice with Mr. Benjamin Browne, who has given his master great satis-

faction in his service ; is twenty-one years of age the 1st of April next ; and then out of his time. I intend, God willing, he shall wait upon you by the first ship after he is out of his time, and hope he will be very capable of business, being bred up a Salem merchant, and went to the Latin school till he was fourteen years old. Now if any business considerable should happen, I do propound that my son Nat., should live at Boston, and manage a warehouse there, and what goods may be proper for our trade at Salem, I would manage here, and should be often also at Boston, to oversee and assist there ; also my eldest son John, whom I brought up at home, is very capable of business, a very hopeful young man as any in our towne, sober and judicious. He was married at 20 years of age to Hannah, daughter to Captain Samuel Gardner ; is now 25 years old ; has made a good progress in the world ; built him a good house ; has one fishing vessel ; is Lieutenant of one of our military companies, and register to the Judge for probate of wills and granting administrations for this county ; and well accepted in the place. Now, if business worth while should offer, he may likewise be concerned. He has one daughter, and 2 sons, Mary, John and Samuel. There is now in England, one Mr. Edward Broomfield, a Merchant of Boston, and a Justice of peace ; another to whom I refer you for further satisfaction about these matters. He married our Colonel Danforth's daughter. And I would further propound my opinion, that, considering that money is of late grown so exceeding scarce amongst us, that the making of returns for England, by the way of Barbadoes, Leeward-Islands, Bilboa, Oporto, Cadiz, and Isle of Wight, would be more easy and safe than direct for England ; and it's probable, more advantageous ; because, money being scarce, and returns direct, difficult to be got, debts must be contracted to procure money, which will be hardly got in ; whereas, a man may sell more goods, and better get in his debts more speedily and certainly, for barter of goods for those markets, than direct.

7th. I have enclosed and sent a list of those goods which I judge proper for Salem trade, and as near as I know the cost in England, and what they may be sold here ; though there must be allowance given for variation of prices here and there, as they may happen to be scarce

or plenty,—for there, goods and every thing (which is not the produce of this country), that is fit for the use of mankind for use and delight, is proper: Though I do not advise to send any extra high priced things, the meaner sort most vendible.

Your former letter you mention, is not yet come to my hand. I have not received any from you, since that of 26*th* of *September*, 1698.

If your attornys, before your arrival, or yourself after your arrival, should see cause to send any goods to me, I shall endeavor faithfully to do my utmost for your advantage, and follow the direction given me thereabout. For any thing you may be desirous to know about the circumstances of the trade, government and concerns of this country, the forenamed Mr. Broomfield will fully satisfy you.

It is reported that the Earle of Bellamont, our present Governour, is like to be sent for home to England. If so that you should incline to give yourself up to the fatigues and trouble of Government, its possible you may obtain it, and I believe you would be very acceptable to the generality of the people.

I have not heard any thing of our brother Thomas, since he went away out of this country; do'nt doubt he is come to some untimely end.

I do heartily thank you for the good will you express in your letter to me and mine, and hope there will some good arise to us therefrom; but dear brother, the uncertainty of markets at home and abroad; the scarcity of money; the doubts I have, that there will not be an encouraging profit in sending this way, make me doubt* that you and I shall be frustrated in our expectation. However, if when you have had the best advice you can from hence and in England concerning trade, if you see cause to be concerned this way, I will do you the best service I can.

Dear brother, I, my wife and children, do desire heartily, that we may be made happy in the enjoyment of your good company and advice before other things. My dear wife saith that she is almost reconciled to * * * *

[The remainder of this letter is lost.]

* Apprehend.

[There is also a paper written by the venerable parent, dated *May* 1, 1705, entitled "My last words to my children." It begins with stating, that he came to New England in the year 1629, with his honored Father; that he was "acknowledged to be a member of the purest [church] of Salem, and upon examination by the Pastor, was received to full communion, and admitted to the Lord's Supper."—We learn, elsewhere, that "he was the first person admitted to this church, after its formation."—In the writing before us, in a strain of deep and solemn piety, he gives his paternal counsels; and thus concludes;—"Amongst other good books, I desire you to read often, my little book *of making peace with God.* It contains the substance of all saving truth: and so the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

Your dying father, JOHN HIGGINSON.]

COLONEL QUARRY'S MEMORIAL

TO THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF TRADE AND PLANTATIONS,

ON THE STATE OF THE AMERICAN COLONIES.

Copied from a MS. *in the Library of the British Museum; and communicated to the Massachusetts Historical Society, by* J. FRANCIS FISHER, *Esq., of Philadelphia; a Corresponding Member.*

[Colonel Quarry was Judge of the Admiralty in New York and Pennsylvania, and a kind of Government Spy in this country. See the Memoirs of the Pennsylvania Historical Society, for a memorial of his, on the subject of the state of the Colony of Pennsylvania and William Penn's replies. He was said to be of the council for five governments at one time, viz. New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia. Beverley, in his History of Virginia, pp. 92, 96 and 97, represents him as joining with Nicholson, the then Governor of that Colony, in unfavorable representations against the Colonies. He died about the year 1712.]

COLONEL QUARRY'S MEMORIAL.

The State of Pennsylvania.—I received your Lordships Letter of the 25th of ffebruary, with her Majesty's Order in Council, relating to the Courts of Judicature in this Province and the three lower Counties, which I do assure your Lordships, came very seasonably to quiet the minds of the People, which were in a perfect ferment, occasioned by the Proceedings of the last Sessions, held the 10th of April.

Courts of Judicature in Pennsylvania.—In my last, I gave your Lordships an Account that the Goal of this place was thronged with Murderers and ffelons, and that Governour Hamilton had given a Special Commission to two Gentlemen, to try to make a Goal Delivery: But the Jury summoned, would not serve on matters of so high a nature, as the lives of the Queen's subjects, since Mr. Hamilton was not qualified as the Law directs, not having Her Majesty's approbation ; so that Commission fell ; and, in a few days after the Sessions came on, there was a strong debate upon the Bench, about trying of these murderers and ffelons. Some were cautious, and proposed to have them tryed by Judges, Jury and Evidences, sworn and qualified according to Law, but the Major Part carried it, for trying them without any Oath, or so much as the Affirmation to be taken either by Judges, Jury or Evidences, and accordingly they proceeded. At first the People could not believe that they were in earnest, but to their great astonishment, they found them as good as their words.

Several of the Judges left the Bench and refused to act with 'em, and so did Mr. Pen's Attorney General, however they quickly appointed another Attorney, and proceeded. One person was found guilty of murder, whom they condemned to be hanged, and pronounced the sentence of Death ; others the Jury found only guilty of manslaughter, who were immediately burnt in the hand, and put to their Clergy by the Court. All Quakers, and others for Rape and less crimes, discharged.

As soon as they had ended these Sessions, they dispatcht away a Messenger to Colonel Hamilton, to sign the Warrant of Execution ; but he lay very sick then in East-Jersey, and in two days after dyed, being the 26th of April ; so that the murderer hath by that means, as yet escaped hanging. I cannot sufficiently express the great consternation that possest the Spirits of People on this occation ; Every one made it their own case, and thought themselves not secure of their Lives under this Quaker Government ; if they must be tryed by Judges, Jury and Evidence, which are under no tye or obligation of an Oath, or so much as an Affirmation according to Law ; so that when your Lordshipp's letter came, with the Queen's order in Council, they could not forbear Publick Rejoicing.

The Queen's Letter presented.—And now my Lords, give me leave to acquaint you, that in obedience to your commands, I attended on the President and Council, and shewed them Her Majesty's Order, which was read ; after which they were pleased to say, that they would readily comply with the Queen's Orders, in what lay in their Powers, and not contrary to their consciences. I thought this too general an answer, and prest them to give a more positive one, which they have promised to do, in fifteen days time.

I quickly found that they would evade that Order, by finding Persons fit for their purpose, that would either take the Oaths or the Affirmation ; But then they conclude that neither the Jury nor the Evidence are obliged to take either, but the Queen's Order ; but wee hope that your Lordshipps will please to get a further Explanation of Her Majesty's Orders, to secure Her Majesty's subjects from that greatest Evill ; and that in Criminal Matters, they may not be concerned on their Affirmation, since the Law Expects them.

It seems very strange that that Government should venture to act at that extravagant rate, when they know very well that there are complaints against them, before your Lordshipps, for presuming formally to try, condemn and execute the Queen's subjects, without either the Judges, Jury or Evidences being sworn : But they think Mr. Pen's interest so great with her Majesty and Ministers of State, that they may venture to doe any thing ; and indeed many believe them, seeing he hath interest enough to gain any

point: The Death of Col. Hamilton will alter all his measures here, and gives us hopes that all things will now be settled on a sure foundation.

Having perused the two Deeds granted to Mr. Pen, by King James when Duke of York, for the three lower counties, and finding that no Powers of Government are conveyed by them, and that no Commission was granted to him from the Crown, to exercise the Powers of Government, I could not imagine what colour or pretence he had, for assuming all the powers of Regal Government: At last by the assistance of one of his Officers, in searching the Records of this Province, I found the Law or Act of Assembly made here, which is the foundation of all his pretences. I have here enclosed, sent you a copy of it, by which your Lordshipps will see that he hath no powers but what he hath been pleased to give himself.

I have enquired into the circumstances of passing that Act, and have this account from some of the persons that were Members of that Assembly; who say that at Mr. Pen's first coming over into these parts, he did not in the least pretend to the Government of the Lower Counties: But after some considerable time, he employed his Agents about the Country, to persuade the people to petition him, that they might be united to his Province, and under one Government with them. They were told what a great advantage it would be to them, which induced them to comply. So that, in case the People have power to make Mr. Pen Governor, or he to make himself one, he is duly qualified: But if that cannot be, and is ridiculous to suppose, then I affirme he hath no pretence nor the least Right to the Government of the three lower Counties, and yet for him still to assume and exercise all Powers of Government, and to dispute his Right of Government with her Majesty, astonishes us all.

Commission opened after Mr. Hamilton's death.—After the Death of Col. Hamilton, they opened a Commission which Mr. Pen left at his going hence, in the hands of his Secretary. By which he appoynted that in case of Col. Hamilton's death, the administration of the Government of Pensylvania should be in the Council, but whether by design or mistake, he hath made no provision for the Government of the Three lower Counties. His ffriends give

out that it was by mistake, but others are of another opinion ; for when he went hence, he had no hopes of continuing the Government, and therefore was resolved to leave the three lower Counties in confusion. I doe most humbly propose, that your Honours will please to take some speedy course, for settling that country.

The Three Lower Counties Valuable to the Crown.—The encouragement of the Three Lower Counties, will be of ten times the advantage to her Majesty in her Revenue, that the Province of Pensilvania is ; for all the Tobacco that is shipped out of this Bay, is produced in those Three Counties, the Trade of which will increase daily, if encouraged.

One Standard of Coynes beneficial to Trade and her Majesties Colonies.—I thought myself obliged to acquaint your Lordshipps, that nothing could tend more to the encrease of Trade, and the prosperity and good of these parts of the world, than what your Lordshipps have proposed, the reducing all the Coynes of America to one standard ; And it will in the first place have this Effect, to prevent the carrying the money in specie out of her Majesty's Governments of Virginia and New York, into the Proprietary Colonies, it will make most of the money center in England ; for those Provinces that do not produce such commodities as are fit to be shipt for England, must be forced to send the pieces of 8 in Specie, to make returns for the goods they receive from thence, which they are forced to do sometimes now, though the difference of Exchange is in some places 30, 40, and in Pensilvania, 50 per cent worse than Sterling. It will make Trade Easy, give a general satisfaction to all sorts of people, and prevent the Labourers and Tradesmen from Quitting the Queen's Governments, to go and settle in the Proprietary Governments on the bare name of Great Wages, when in reality it is but a mere cheat : However, this Noyes and Gingle carries abundance of people from her Majesty's Plantations, where their labour doth vastly augment her Majesty's Revenue, in the improvement of those Commodities that pay a considerable duty ; whereas all their Labour and Industry in this, and the other Proprietary Governments, is of no advantage to the Crown.

Account of the Disorders in Carolina.—I received Letters

this week from South Carolina, which give me a very strange account of the great disorders which have happened in that Government, since their unfortunate disappointment and miscarriage against St. Augustine. The charge of this Expedition, hath fallen very heavy upon the Country, and the ways and means for raising the money hath left them all together by the Ears. I will not trouble your Lordshipps with particulars, since you will have it at large from both Parties.

Method of reducing St. Augustine: Advantages of it.—The Warr is continued very briskly, by the Indians which are under the English Government, and those under the Spaniards. Our Indians have in several Battles killed a great number of them, above 500 of them in one battle, besides Spaniards that were amongst them: They have also burnt many of their Towns, and destroyed almost all their corn, and provisions; so that, unless St. Augustine be supplied from the Havanna, they cannot subsist long. Considering the condition of that place, it may be reduced with ease, and very little charge to her Majesty. I propose that one or two Men of Warr, in their way home from Jamaica, may as they come through the Gulf, stop at St. Augustine with a Bomb Ketch. Timely notice must be given to the Government of Carolina, that they may goe with their fforces by the Inland Passage, which they will undertake very readily, being fully satisfyed of the necessity of taking that place; else they must expect nothing but ruine.

I have sufficiently layed before your Lordshipps, the advantage of reducing this place, not only in reference to Carolina, but to all Her Majesty's Governments on the Maine. It will put a stop to the French designs who are endeavouring from Canada, to secure the Inland parts of the whole Maine.

I have formerly shewn the ways and means they make use of, to effect this great design, but by our securing the Southern Parts, we shall prevent them, and break all their measures by securing the Indians to the Interest of England, which will be easily effected, since they must depend upon us for the supply of Indian Trade.

Port Royal preferable to St. Augustine.—St. Augustine being reduced, Her Majesty may then either make that the seat of Government, or demolish it and settle Port Royal,

which is on all accounts a far better place, in respect to its situation, goodness of land, but above all, it hath the advantage of a very good River. I can now assure your Lordshipps, that a very ingenious man and good artist, hath lately surveyed all that Coast and harbour, and found not less than four fathoms at low water, and it flows about six foot, which is water enough for a ffourth rate ship. I have formerly layed before your Lordshipps, the great advantage it will be to Her Majesty in settling this place which I refer to.

Reasons of the disorder in Carolina.—And to proceed to give the reasons of the present distractions and confusions in South Carolina.

The ffirst step was the great irregularity in the late Governour's venire in the Election of Assembly, in which were forcibly returned several persons, being chosen by persons not qualified, as negroes, aliens, seamen, and members of the Upper House, and all this to serve a turn. And amongst other designs, the main was for drawing out the Country into Arms, to attaque St. Augustines, when at the same time, they had neither Man of War, Bomb Ketch, nor Guns fit to make a breach ; so that the designe was contrary to all reason and sense. However, the Governor was resolved to prosecute the undertaking, though by so doing, he ran the hazard of ruining the whole Country, which will certainly be the consequence, unless your Lordshipps will please to prevail with Her Majesty, to assist in reducing that Place.

After the defeat of this ill-managed Design, the next thing that lay before the Assembly, was to consider how to pay the Debt contracted on this Occasion, which amounted to no less than 8000 pounds. Those Gentlemen that were against carrying on the Warr, under all these unreasonable circumstances, were, however willing to pay the Debts, provided they might have those late abuses in the Election of the Assembly, and other grievances remedied. But the Governour refused these good offers, which forced more than half of the Assembly to withdraw, and enter their Protest: on which followed a great Ryot for many days. They broke open several Gentlemen's Houses, assaulted, beat and abused several Gentlemen of the best quality in the Country. Complaynt being made to the

Governour, he refused to do them Justice, nor could they have Justice in the Court, upon an Indictment brought against the Ryoters. These confusions in the Country forced Sir Nathaniel Johnson to publish his Commission, which till then he had not. The abused complain to him, but he tells them it is now too late, but he would take care for the future, no such actions should be allowed. So for want of Justice, those Gentlemen that were abused and injured, resolved to send persons home, to complain and represent their case to your Lordshipps for redress. I will not take up more of your Lordshipps time on this subject, but refer you for particulars, to those Gentlemen that are gone home on purpose to attend on your Lordshipps about this business.

The State of New England.—I thought myself obliged to make some few remarks upon the Government of New England.

In the first place, I believe it would be impossible for any Governour to serve the Interest of the Crown under the present Constitution of that Government, for as long as they have the choice of the Council, the Judges, the Sheriffs, and consequently the Juries, and all the other officers, they have nothing to hope for or fear from the Queen's Government. I cannot see what advantage it is to her Majesty, to have only the appointing of the Governor and Secretary: It gives them colour of opposing the commands of the Crown, and carrying on their own Interest, without running any hazard. Whereas, were the choice wholly in them, it would put them upon their guarde, make them very cautious what they did, and very ready to comply with the commands of the Crown, for fear they should forfeit and lose all: but now they have secured all they would have; and in case of any wrong measure, misfortunes and any ill-conduct in Government, they will find pretences enough to lay all on her Majesty's Governour, so that they think themselves in far better circumstances than ever. Besides the present Constitution of this Government, hath a great influence on all Her Majesty's Governments in America, in most of which I can assure your Lordshipps, that Commonwealth notions and Principle, is too much improved within these few years. The people are uneasy, that Her Majesty's Subjects in New

England and the Proprietary Governments, should enjoy more Privileges and benefits in Government and Trade, than they do.

This puts them upon Enquiry, Projects and Tryalls of Skill with their several Governours, in hopes to gain the same Privileges, which else they never would have thought on. This growing evil requires speedy application, and with humble submission to your Lordshipps, nothing will so effectually answer that end, as reducing all the Provinces on the maine of America, to one Standard Rule and Constitution of Government, as near as circumstances will admit ; and also to one Standard of Coyn. The effecting of both is, and hath been for some time under your Lordshipps consideration. I hope quickly to see it put in practice. It will make all her Majesty's Governments easy satisfyed and happy, and will tend to your Lordshipps eternal Honor, in being the Instruments of so much good to all Her Majesty's Provinces.

Colonel Dudley can prevail nothing.—Col. Dudley hath been forced already to dissolve two Assemblies, nor will the third any ways answer his Expectation : They being resolved to choose the very same Men. He hath shewn himself very active in endeavouring to secure the Frontiers of that Government : but he cannot make brick without straw ; They are resolved to oppose him, though he hath studyed in all things to oblige and please them : Yet he finds that all his parts, ingenuity and long Experience of the People, cannot stem the current of their prejudice against him. They say that he hath given several instances of his remembering the old Quarrel, and they resolve on their parts, never to forget it, so that it is generally believed, he will never gain any poynt from them. They do not stick to say, that a stranger could prevaile ten times more with them, which shews the temper and uncharitableness of these People.

A Governour depending on the People's humours for subsistence, cannot serve the Crown.—Besides, I cannot see how it is possible for any Governour to serve the Interest of the Crown that must depend upon the precarious humours of the people for a subsistence. They will never part with their money, unless they have an equivalent, or something more valuable. It lays the Governour under the Tempta-

tion, of making sometimes a very disadvantageous bargain for the Crown, and stooping below the dignity of his character. A Governour ought to have his support as well as dependance, immediately from the Crown, though at the same time, the fund ought to come from the People, but by such ways and means as ought first to settle it in the Crown. I doe most humbly beg your Lordshipps pardon for this freedom.

Colonel Nicholson at New York.—Col. Nicholson was lately here, in order to consult His Excellency, my Lord Cornbury, about some matters relating to Her Majesty's service. There is a good correspondency between these two Governours, which will be attended with very good effects.

The Queen's Governours to meet once a year.—Your Lordshipps directions for a Meeting once a year, of all the Queen's Governours on the maine, would be of very great service on several accounts, and more especially in order to the removal of all scruples and objections, which may be raised against that general good, of bringing all the Governments under one System, Form and Constitution. And now that I have had occasion to speak of that worthy Gentleman, Col. Nicholson, give me leave to make some few short remarks on him and the Government of Virginia.

When he found that the Assembly were not willing to pay their Quota for the support of Albany, he being ordered not to press the business too far, was resolved however, that Her Majesty's Interest should not suffer ; though the Assembly would not understand their own: Yet no man knew better than he, who by long experience could judge, that the support of Albany is the only security, that all the Governments on the maine have against the ffrench, and all the Indians in their Interest : He very well knows, that if Albany be not effectually supported, we must lose all the Five Nations that are now in our Interest, and are the only barrier against the ffrench, and all those great Nations in their Interest. By the neglect of Albany, we shall not only lose so many sure friends, but shall add so many great and warlike Nations to the number of our enemies, and then, I am sure it will be in the power of the ffrench, to be Masters of all Her Majesty's Provinces on the maine, when they please. This is a truth which I am

sure your Lordshipps know very well, and if you please to lay your commands on me, I will demonstrate it with such reasonable and convincing arguments, as will leave little or no room for objecting. All which, Governour Nicholson knows so well, that as soon as he found that the Assembly would not see their own Interest, or comply with Her Majesty's orders, he went immediately to New York, and out of great zeale to Her Majesty's service and security of Her Provinces, he gave his own Bills for 900 pounds sterling, to answer the Quota of Virginia; wholly depending on Her Majesty's favour and justice, in reembursing him again out of Her Revenue in that Province; which by his prudent conduct, he has retrieved from being considerably in debt, to more than 10,000 pounds in Bank, all publick Building and debts being paid.

Your Lordshipps do so very well know that Gentleman, that it is needless to say any more of him at present, but will proceed to say something of the present state of Virginia.

The State of Virginia.—The People are very numerous, dispersed through the whole Province. Their almost sole Business is planting and improving Tobacco, even to that degree, that most of them scarce allow themselves time to produce their necessary provision, and consequently take little leisure to busy themselves about matters of State. They have always been respectfull and obedient.

This of the Generall. But on every River of this Province, there are men in number from ten to thirty, who by Trade and Industry have gotten very competent Estates. These Gentlemen take care to supply the poorer sort with goods and necessaries, and are sure to keep them always in their debt, and consequently dependant on them: Out of this number are chosen Her Majesty's Council, the Assembly, the Justices and the Officers of the Government. Many of these Gentlemen have of late years applyed themselves in procuring from the Governours good Laws, for the better Government and Improvement of the Country. A thing very commendable, had they not been often mistaken in their notions and means of pursuing this end, which they truly are. They consider that this Province is of far greater Importance to Her Majesty, than all the rest of the Provinces on the maine, and therefore they falsely

conclude, that they ought to have greater Privileges than the rest of Her Majesty's Subjects. This put them upon a nice Enquiry into the circumstances of the Government; and finding that New England and the Proprietary Colonies are allowed greater privileges, both in respect of their Constitution of Government and Trade, this makes 'em very uneasy, and sowers their Temper to that degree, that it is very difficult for any Governour to please them, and pursue the Queen's Instructions.

The Assembly, they conclude themselves entitled to all the Rights and Privileges of an English Parliament, and begin to search into the Records of that Honourable House for Precedents to govern themselves by. The Council have vanity enough to think, that they almost stand upon equal Terms with the Right Honourable, the House of Lords. These false and pernitious notions, if not timely prevented, will have a very ill consequence. His Excellency, Governour Nicholson, by prudent conduct hath hitherto put a stop to this growing evil, in all parts of the Government, except a few factious spirits in the Council.

Your Lordshipps may see by the Council's last Address to Her Majesty, some of the leaven of these notions. They are pleased to justify their former reasons for not obeying the Order for paying their Quota, towards the support of Albany.

This they seem to do, in opposition to your Lordshipps Judgment in that case, nor doe they in that Address treate your Lordshipp with that due respect, which in duty they ought: but when I consider two of the Gentlemen that had a hand in drawing it up, I see no reason to expect better from them. I am no stranger to that secret wheel, which gives motion to all those mischievous designes, which are fomented in that Government.

I am not willing to give particular characters, without your Lordshipps directions, but I assure your Lordshipps, that the mischief lyes in a very narrow compass, and may easily be removed and prevented, by removing two, or three at most, out of the Council, who are men of uneasy spirits, and have made it their business to oppose Government.

I have much more to say on this subject, but for fear of trespassing on your Lordshipps, will refer to another opportunity. And now that I have layd before your Lordshipps

briefly this growing evil; I am very well assured, that your Lordshipps will apply the proper Remedy. I may now say, that now or never is the time to maintain and support the Queen's PREROGATIVE, and put a stop to those wrong, pernitious notions, which are improving daily, not only in Virginia, but in all Her Majesty's other Governments. A frown from Her Majesty now, can doe more than perhaps an army hereafter. I cannot recommend a more effectual means, than what I formerly mentioned. The reducing all Her Majesty's Governments on the maine, under one Constitution and Government, as near as possible.

The State of New York.—I did in my former Memorial, give your Lordshipps a short relation of the miserable, distracted and unhappy circumstances which the Province of New York was reduced to, during the Government of my Lord Bellamont and those that succeeded him, until the arrival of his Excellency, the Lord Cornbury. I did also lay before your Lordshipps, the happy change of affairs in relation to all parts of Government, but could not be so particular as that subject required.

I have since made it my business, to inform myself more exactly and nicely, into all the circumstances of this Government, which I hold myself obliged faithfully to represent to your Lordships under these several heads.

The state of the Revenue. The Militia, Arms and Ammunition. The Fortifications, both for defence of the Town, and for Albany, and the Inland Parts against the ffrench. The state of the Government, in relation to the *Indians. Trade. Laws. Temper of the People*, and lastly, in *Relation to the Neighbouring Governments.*

The state of the Revenue of New York.—As touching the *Revenue.* When my Lord Bellamont received the Government from Colonel Hecher, there was no more debt due, than the arrears of the Revenue and other Taxes would fully answer: But when his Excellency, my Lord Cornbury entered upon the Government, he found it at least 10,000 pounds in debt, and yet no new Fortifications built, nor the soldiers to be payed out of the Revenue: nor is it easy to guess, how all this could be in so short a time. My Lord hath taken much pains to find out the State of the Revenue, and how all those debts could be contracted; but Mr. Weaver carrying away the Books, makes it very diffi-

cult to be done. The ill-management of the Revenue, in my Lord Bellamont's time, has quite ruined the credit of the Government. I am very well assured, that it is quite impossible for this Country to discharge this debt, and without it be done, the Country must be very miserable.

The constant charge of supporting and defending this Government is very great, and the whole weight of it lyes on a small County. I am sure it is impossible for them to bear it, especially in War-time. I doe therefore most humbly propose, that Her Majesty be gratiously pleased to discharge the present debts of this Country.

And that some effectual means be found to oblige the other Governments on the maine to pay their Quotas towards the support of Albany. There is an absolute necessity, that these two points be effectually answered, nor will the case admit of much delay.

There is no depending on the neighbouring Governments for supply, since neither their own safety, nor the Queen's commands can oblige them to comply. Nothing will do but a short Act of Parliament in England, which I am sure will admit of very little debate, when your Lordshipps do lay before the Parliament ; that the security of Her Majesty's Empire on the Continent is concerned ; that the People of the several Governments will not see their own Danger, nor prevent it ; that in Reason and Justice, they are obliged ; that what is required of them, is very small and inconsiderable. Such an Act would not only answer this end effectually, but would be of great advantage on several accounts. It would open the people's Eyes, to see their own Interest, and make them more ready to comply with other of Her Majesty's just demands ; and cure them of that sower temper, which hath already possest them, in opposition to Government ; for, as I have already hinted to your Lordshipps, Commonwealth notions improve dayly, and, if it be not checked in time, the Rights and Privileges of English Subjects, will be thought by them too narrow.

State of the Militia in New York.—My Lord Cornbury found the Militia of this province, under no regulations at all, having neither Arms nor Ammunition as they ought ; nor were they even so much as drawn out to exercise or view them, in all my Lord Bellamont's time, except the

Regiment of Foot, at New York. His Excellency hath taken great pains in settling the Militia, under good Officers; but he cannot as yet, supply the want of Arms and Ammunition. That must be done from England, and I hope with all speed possible. I am sure the safety of the Government requires it.

The Standing fforces at New York.—The Standing fforces were, at my Lord Cornbury's arrival, under very ill circumstances, quite naked for want of clothes; not half of them had arms fit for service. Besides, the Queen's stores are but very ill furnished. My Lord hath taken great care to have all the arms fixed and in readiness, but without a supply, he will be at a great loss.

The Condition of the fforts at New York.—The fforts and ffortyffications both in New York and Albany, were left to my Lord in a miserable condition. The platforms rotten, many of the guns dismounted for want of carriages. My Lord Bellamont built a Magazine over the Gate of the Fort, which might more properly be called a Pidgeon house. It cost 800 pounds, though a better could be built for 200, but the building can no ways answer the end, being exposed to the danger of lightning, and to the shot and bombs of an enemy, and in blowing of it up, it would not only ruine the ffort, but a great part of the City. His Excellency hath for a small charge, built an extraordinary vault, which will effectually secure the powder from those accidents, and hath already put the ffort into some order, and in a little time, designs to compleat that work.

The Condition of the ffort at Albany, and out-fforts.—The ffort at Albany, and all the out-fforts are quite ruined and decayed, being only stockadoed, which were all quite rotten, not fit for any defence. My Lord hath layed the foundation of a stone fort at Albany, and hath carried it on a great way. It will be very regular, and answer the end: I hope his Lordship will quickly finish it. It gives great satisfaction to our Indians, who lay the great stress of their security on the defence of these fforts. No other consideration whatever, can secure them to the English Interest. Whenever they quit it, I am sure the remotest Province on the maine, will find the fatal effects of their being our enemies. That perhaps will open their eyes, to see their ruin and danger when too late; though now they will not

prevent it, though they might on so very easy Terms as their small Quota: But I hope your Lordshipps will find a way to secure 'em even against their will.

Two ways of securing New York Province.—There are two ways of securing this Province, by Land and by Water. That by Land, must be by having good fforts at Albany, and the out places well manned, furnished and constantly supply'd; which my Lord resolves to do. I heartily wish his Lordship be not discouraged for want of money to carry on and compleat so noble a design. His Excellency hath resolved on the best and only way of securing this place by water, which is by building two Stone Batteries on the Narrows, between Long Island and Staten Island, which is the channel where all ships must come, and is so narrow, that these Batteries will command and secure this Harbour. I have taken a full view of it, that I might the better represent it to your Lordshipps.

The Trade of New York.—The Trade of this Place was formerly very considerable, beyond any of the Neighbouring Provinces, but hath been extreamly ruined and impaired ever since my Lord Bellamont came hither, even to that degree, that it will be some years, before they retrieve their former Trade; which is a great Misfortune to this Place, which doth so wholly depend upon Trade, and did enable them to support and maintain the great charge of the Government, which they find impossible for them to do, under the present circumstances. And now that they are the less able, the Tax and charge of supporting the Government, is far heavier on them than ever; when at the same time, their neighbours who have all along enjoyed the ffreedom and Advantage of Trade, have no ffrontiers to defend, nor do they pay any Taxes, yet refuse to give them any help, which they think very hard, and makes them very uneasy.

I have been here some time during the sitting of the Assembly, which gave me the opportunity of seeing the Temper of the People. They having a very great Honour and veneration for his Excellency, which is the only reason that restrains their discontents and uneasiness. However, they could not forbear to make some attempts and endeavours against the Queen's Prerogative, but my Lord quickly

saw through their design, and by a prudent conduct, put a stop to it.

The Assembly were for asserting Rights, which never any of their Predecessors ever pretended to. My Lord gave such solid reasons against their pretences, that I believe it hath not only secured the point, and quieted them for the present, but if I mistake not, will prevent all future attempts of that nature, especially during my Lord Cornbury's Government. I cannot be so particular as the nature of the subject requires, for fear of swelling this Memorial. I will therefore chuse to give your Lordshipps a state of this business by itself. What this Assembly attempted, proceeded from the same Spirit that hath infected all the Governments on the maine, though not as yet improved here to that degree as in other places.

My Lord hath used all the proper ways and means to secure the Five Nations, which is a very nice point to manage, besides a great charge in presents. They are very uncertain people to trust to, and do lye under very strong temptations from the ffrench.

It is a very hard case, that the security of so many of Her Majesty's Provinces and Subjects, should depend upon the uncertain humour of those Indians ; but it is certainly so, nor is there any way to remedy it but one, which will not only put an end to this precarious dependance, but also ease the Crown and Subjects of this Province, from the vast charge of maintaining fforces, ffortifications, and the constant bribery of the Indians, which amounts to a great constant yearly charge.

Taking of Canada, the only way of giving peace to America.—This Effectual way is, that Her Majesty will resolve to drive the French out of Canada, which I assure your Lordshipps may be effected with great ease.

It must cost the Crown some treasure, but by Effecting the design, Her Majesty will soon be reimburst the charge, by the Trade of that place : besides, there will be saved the yearly charge of maintaining the ffrontiers, and will entirely secure the Empire of America in peace, with the whole Trade of the maine, which will be of vast consequence.

And all this might be effected by two thousand regular fforces, ten Men of War, and two Bomb Ketches. The

effecting of this design is of that consequence, that all the maine would heartily join in it, as one man. I propose that the Ships and Regular fforces, should touch at Boston, and goe directly from thence to Quebeck in Canada; and, that at the same time, the fforces of America should march by land from Albany, with all the fforces of Indians. The ffrench are not three thousand effective men, in all that Country.

Nothing can be of so great consequence to Her Majesty, as the effecting of this business, and nothing is wanting, but that Her Majesty resolve on the designe; and then I am sure that My Lord Cornbury, and all the Governours on the maine, will propose the ways and means of carrying on this Design. I am sure that it will be of far more advantage to the crown, than the taking of Martinico, Guadalupa, and all the ffrench Islands; for Newfoundland and all the Trade of the Coast, will of course fall into the hands of the English; which is all I will venture to say on this head, but referr it to your Lordshipp's better judgment.

The State of East and West New Jersey.—And now proceed to tell your Lordshipps, that the Jerseys have been for a long time in confusion, having no Government; which makes them all, heartily wish my Lord Cornbury's Commission for that Province, were come; that so they might be settled on a sure foundation, which as yet they never have been.

The contests of West Jersey have always been betwixt the Quakers, and Her Majesty's subjects, that are no Quakers. The Quakers, though the far less in number, have always been supported in the Government against the others, over whom they have for many years insulted and tyrannized.

The contest in East Jersey, is of a different nature. Whether the Country shall be a Scotch Settlement, or an English settlement. The Scotch have had for many years, the advantage of the English, by the Interest of a Scotch Governour, Col. Hamilton; but it is the expectation of all, that my Lord Cornbury will reconcile all these differences, unite all Interests, settle 'em all on a sure foundation, and make them all easy and happy. They have all a very

great Opinion and Honour for His Lordship, which is a good step to that great work.

Considerable Quakers in Pensilvania, inclinable to Her Majesty's immediate Government.—I find that the most considerable men of the Quakers in Pensilvania, finding that Mr. Pen cannot secure them in their lawless power of Government, are now very willing to be under Her Majesty's Government, provided that my Lord Cornbury be appoynted the Governour. They have a very great respect for him, and say that they expect more justice from his Lordship, than ever they have had from Mr. Pen. All the rest of Her Majesty's good subjects of that Government, do heartily join with them, that his Excellency, my Lord Cornbury may be the happy instrument of making all easy, and settling us on the same foundation as the rest of Her Majesty's Governments, which is all that is wished or desired.

The State of Connecticut.—I did designe to have given to your Lordshipps, the History of Connecticut; but on a nice enquiry into the state of that place, I found the roguery and villainy of that Province, both in relation to Government and Trade, is enough to fill a volume, which makes me not willing to venture upon it at present. If the Government be continued longer in these men's hands, the honest Trade of these parts will be ruined; and my Lord Cornbury's Commission for commanding the Militia of that Country, will be of no use.

Observations on the State of the Guard Ships in the Colonies.—I did propose to have shewn to your Lordshipps at large, that the charge Her Majesty is at, in maintaining several Men of War in some of the Governments here, doth not in the least, answer any one end proposed by it; and all by the Temper and illconduct of those Captains that command Her Majesty's ships.

I presume that the main end of all this charge, is intended for the security of the Provinces, to prevent illegal Trade, and encourage honest Trade; but nothing of this is in the least answered.

He that hath the command of one of Her Majesty's Ships, be they never so small, thinks himself above all Her Majesty's Governours, and even above Govenment itself. They make it their business to oppose authority,

and when there is any ffaction in any place, they are sure to joyn with them against the Governour. They will lye in Harbour for a year together, without once going out to cruize.

By their ill usage of their men, they force them to run away from their Ships, and then they ruine the Merchants and Trade of the Place, by pressing away seamen from the Vessels. And thus, instead of encouraging the honest Trade, they ruine it ; and as for Illegal Traders, they are safe enough from their search or enquiry after them.

The Complaints against the Commanders of Her Majesty's Ships, are become general. I presume your Lordshipps will receive them from Virginia, Maryland and New York. It would take a Quire of paper, for particularizing the several rude, barbarous and extravagant actions of one Captain James Moody, Commander of the Southampton Man of War. He neither spared the Gentlemen of the Country, the Queen's Officers, nor the Governour himself, because they would not suffer him to marry a Gentleman's daughter, when at the same time, he hath a wife and children in London. This was a sufficient ground for him to attempt the lives of the Gentlewoman's Father, several of his relations, and especially a very worthy Gentleman, one Col. Cary, that courted the young Lady. The Governour was forced to secure the peace, the Country being all in an uproar, by this man's extravagant actions. The particulars your Lordshipps will have from the Governour and Council of Virginia ; with a long charge against one Captain Bostwick, from the President and Council of Maryland. That Gentleman's Conduct will fit him rather for Bedlam, than the Queen's Ship.

His Excellency, Lord Cornbury, will give you the character of one Captain Rogers, who by the death of Captain Stapylton, commands the Jersey Man of War, who hath lyen in Harbour ever since my Lord's arrival in this Place. Her Majesty was pleased to direct his Lordship, to order Captain Rogers to take several vessels loaden with provisions on Her Majesty's account in Pensilvania and Carolina, and convoy them to Jamaica, which might have been ready before Christmas last. But in the Fall, when my Lord ordered him to get ready his ship, he pretended she was unrigged and layd up, and could not be ready till the

Spring, but then would be ready by the 8th or 20th of March at furthest. Accordingly, the ships and provisions were all in readiness; but, notwithstanding my Lord's repeated orders to him, he lay in the Harbour till the latter end of May; all which time, Her Majesty paid demurrage, and the provisions lay on board, which was great damage. And, after he went to Philadelphia, and took the vessels there under his charge, refused to obey my Lord's orders, in touching at Carolina, to take these vessels with provisions under his convoy: But this is not all the mischief he hath done; but by lying in Harbour so long at New York, and pressing the men out of the Merchant Ships, he hath ruined all this Summer's Trade of that place.

I cannot be more particular at present. Those Evills will never be remedied, unless the Captains of the Queen's Ships are ordered to be more immediately under the respective Governour's Commands.

Proposal about Naval Stores.—I did purpose to have layd before your Lordshipps, the great advantage it would be to Her Majesty, if proper methods were taken to encourage the sowing of Hemp and fflax in these parts, where there is a vast quantity of land very proper and fit for it: The people only want the security of a certain Market. It would be the interest of the Crown, to encourage them at least a few years, till they are settled in that Manufactory.

Her Majesty might be furnished from hence with Tar, Pitch, Rosin, all sorts of Timber and Masts, sufficient to supply all the Navy, which would be a great advantage, and prevent the money from going out of England. But to represent this fully in all its particulars, will require a distinct Memorial, which I resolve to present to your Lordshipps very suddenly.

I will not give your Lordshipps any further trouble at present, but to implore your Lordshipps pardon, and leave to subscribe myself, as truely I am,

Right Honourable,

Your Lordshipps

most obedient servant,

ROBERT QUARRY.

New York, June 16, 1703.

MEMOIR OF ISAAC ALLERTON.

[The following interesting notices were communicated to the Society, and a vote was passed, that they should be inserted in the Collections; but, on putting the Letter itself into the hands of the Committee of publication, the Judge, with great modesty, expressed a desire, that what he called the concluding complimentary part, might be omitted. The Committee, however, considered the passage to which he referred, so pertinent and justly rendered, as well as happily expressed, that "they had it not in their heart" to suppress it.—"*Reddite omnibus debita.*"]

Hon. John Davis.

Dear Sir,

In the appendix to your valuable edition of Morton's Memorial, (p. 393), having commented on the services rendered to Plymouth by Isaac Allerton, particularly in 1629, you remark that your information respecting that eminent man among the Pilgrims, after that year, is not such as you could wish. You find him at Salem, in July, 1630; returning from England, in the ship White Angel, in 1631; concerned in the loss of a trading wigwam at Machias, in 1633; suffering by the wreck of his pinnace from Port Royal, in 1634; and still farther impoverished by the loss of his bark at Cape Ann, in 1635; after which, you say, his name is not mentioned by any of the early writers. You quote from the manuscript of a friend, who says that "in 1646, Mr. Allerton appears to be an inhabitant of New Amsterdam," and you cite the testimony of Gov. Hutchinson, who says that he "left the country, and settled in England," and add that "his male posterity settled in Maryland." It gave me much pleasure to inform you, when I had the honor of meeting you a few days ago, that Isaac Allerton spent his last years in New Haven, and died here, in 1659. In compliance with the request

with which you honored me, I now give you such notices of him, as I can hastily glean from our town and colony records.

The first instance in which I find Mr. Allerton named, is in the record of a "General Court for the Jurisdiction," 27th Oct., 1643, at which "a proposition and request" were "made by Captain Underhill, and Mr. Allerton, by instructions from the Dutch Governor, and some of the freemen of that jurisdiction, for the raising of one hundred soldiers out of these plantations of the English, and armed and victualled, to be led forth by Captain Underhill against the Indians, now in hostility against the Dutch, to be paid by bills of exchange into Holland."

This is in keeping with the information of your friend's manuscript, that in 1646, Allerton was an inhabitant of New Amsterdam. As to the answer given to this proposal, it will suffice to say, that the Court, "though they were affected with a due sense of so much Christian blood, both Dutch and English, under the Dutch Govérnment, lately shed by the Indians," declined the proposal, both because they did "not clearly understand the rise and cause of the war," and because they were restrained by the articles of confederation, with the other New England Colonies.

At what time Mr. Allerton began to reside in New Haven, I have not ascertained. It must have been however, before the 10th of March, 1646-7, for at that time "the names of the people, as they were seated in the meeting-house," were put upon record; and "Thomas Nash, Mr. Allerton, Bro. Perry," were assigned to the second seat of "the cross seats at the end." I need not say, that the "Mr." prefixed to Allerton's name, is a sign of some special respect. "Brother Perry," who was one of his seat-mates, was at that time, the Secretary of the town.

From that time, to the period of his death, I find him occasionally mentioned in the records. For example, at a Court held at New Haven, August 6, 1650, "Mr. Allerton's fence was complained of. Jno. Cooper and the Marshall informed the Court, that Mrs. Allerton hath had warning of it three times; and yet the fence is not mended, but two places remain still defective, as Jno. Cooper says. The Court ordered, that Mr. Allerton pay two shillings for

the two defective places, each time they have been warned." The same report about Mr. Allerton's fence, was repeated from one Court to another, and an additional fine of two shillings ordered each time, till December, when "Mr. Evance said Mrs. Allerton desired him to acquaint the Court with the case." The explanation was, that there had been all along, a misunderstanding between her and John Cooper, about the locality of the fence complained of. "The Court said they must rest in John Cooper's report, because he is in public trust for this matter of fences;" and therefore it was "ordered, that Mr. Allerton pay for the two defects at present, two shillings." All this goes to show, that though Mr. Allerton had his domicil in New Haven, he was, like the Allerton of Plymouth, a man whose business carried him away from home.

At a Court, Nov. 2, 1652, "William Paine and Robert Meaker, were complained of for absence at training. The Court was informed, that Mr. Allerton that morning sent to Mr. Goodyeare to get them free, because of some urgent occasion about his vessel. The Court considering that he did send to ask leave, and it was upon that occasion, and the time the vessel hath lain, and the afflicted state of Mr. Allerton otherwise, did for this time pass it over, without a fine." Methinks this must have been the same Allerton "the unlucky," whose misfortunes, as enumerated in your note, came so thick, in the loss of "wigwam" in 1633, "pinnace" in 1634, and "bark" in 1635.

I do not remember to have noticed any thing else particularly characteristic, till we come to the settlement of his estate. "An inventory of the estate of Isaac Allerton, late of New Haven deceased, taken Feb. 12, 1658," was presented to the Court, on the 5th of April, 1659. Mrs. Allerton, being asked whether there was any Will left by her husband, "answered there was, but she thought that her son had it with him, who was now gone from home." On the 5th of July, the son having returned, presented his father's Will, but the estate being greatly involved, the business was referred to the Court of Magistrates in October. At that Court "the writing presented as the last will and testament of Isaac Allerton," though informal

and without date, was sworn to by John Harriman and Edward Preston, the subscribing witnesses, as "sealed and subscribed by Mr. Allerton deceased, whilst he had the use of his understanding and memory, in a competent degree."

The "writing" was little else than a few hasty memoranda of debts due to him, which he desired his son Isaac, and his wife to receive and to pay out to his creditors "as far as it will go." It begins thus:

"An account of debts due at the Dutch. First, 700 and odd guilders from Tho. Hall, by arbitration of Captaine Willet and Augustine Harman about Captaine Scarlet, which I paid out," &c.

Among the debts due to him, there were 900 guilders from "John Peterson the Bore" [qu. boor?] "as by George Woolseye's books will appear;" from Richard Cloufe, "as George Woolseye's book will make appear, I think 900 guilders, but his estate being broken, I desire that what may be gotten, may be laid hold on for me;" from Henry Brasser "for rent for 18 months from the first October, 1656, to the last of May, '58: for three rooms at 3 guilders a week." He adds, "There is £20 in George Woolseye's hand, that came from Mr. Thomas Mayhue for me." Then, after the sentence constituting his son and wife trustees, he adds, as if it were an afterthought, a memorandum of "a parcell of book lace in Captain Willet's hands, 1300 and odd guilders." Next is the place of the Seal, which is followed by these two sentences, "My brother Bruster owes me fourscore pounds and odd, as the obligations [make] appear. Besides all my debts in Delloware Bay and in Virginia, which in my booke will appear, and in Barbadoes what can be got.

ISAAC ALLERTON, *Senior.*"

The widow and son, both declined the trust of settling the estate, though he was urged as being "the deceased's eldest or only son." Trustees were therefore appointed by the Court. Captain Gookin was one of the creditors. Isaac Allerton, the son, purchased of the creditors, his father's "dwelling-house, orchard and barn, with two acres of meadow."

In a late volume of records, I find a deed dated Oct. 4, 1660, by which Isaac Allerton, not naming any place to which he belonged, or at which he was, at the time of executing the instrument, alienates to his "mother-in-law, Mrs. Johanna Allerton, the house that she now dwells in at New Haven New England," with all the furniture in it, and the lands and appurtenances belonging to it, and also some other personal property, to hold and enjoy during the term of her life, and afterwards to return into the possession of his daughter, Elizabeth Allerton and her heirs, and in case of her dying without issue, then to return to him, the first donor, and his heirs and executors, without intermission. To this deed, after it was recorded, was added in the margin of the book, the following "true record" of a postscript. "This deed, though never witnessed when granted, I do hereby confirm to all intents and purposes, as if it had then been authentically witnessed, and do sign and seal the same in the presence of

March 10, 1682-3. { John Sallmon. / William (W. C.) Corfield. his mark. }

ISAAC ALLERTON."
Seal.

From all these notices, it appears that Isaac Allerton, the pilgrim, whose second wife was Fear Brewster, left at his death only one son Isaac, who graduated at Harvard, in 1650 (see the Appendix to Prof. Kingsley's Centennial Discourse); and a third wife, Johanna, the step-mother of that only son. It appears further, that the son removed to a distance from New Haven, perhaps to Maryland, as Hutchinson says, perhaps to England ; and that he had a daughter Elizabeth. From the perfect silence of the will and other documents, respecting any surviving daughters of the elder Allerton, it may be conjectured, though not certainly inferred, that there were none. From the terms of the deed, signed by the younger Allerton, we may reasonably conclude, that at the date of the deed in 1660, and probably at the date of the postscript, more than

twenty years later, he had no son ; so that we may presume, that in him the race of Isaac Allerton, in the male line at least, became extinct.

As a New Haven man, called by an occasion to act the part of "Old Mortality," I was pleased to ascertain the fact, that among the "garnered dust" which consecrates our public square, is the dust of one of the pilgrims of the Mayflower, the fifth in order of the signers of that memorable compact, signed at Cape Cod, Nov. 11, 1620. To you as a Plymouth man, who have so well fulfilled the "sacred duty" of "renewing to the eyes of posterity, the decaying 'MEMORIAL' of the zeal and sufferings of the forefathers, and thereby trimming, as it were, the beacon light which is to warn future generations to defend their religion," to you of whom it may be said, that "to talk of the exploits of the 'pilgrims' is the delight, as to repair their monuments had been a business of his life," and who have been so "profuse in the communication of all the minute information, which you have collected concerning them, their wars, and their wanderings," the time which I have spent in thus ascertaining the burial-place, and relating all that we can now know of the latest calamities of Isaac Allerton, will not seem to be wasted.

Very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

LEONARD BACON.

New Haven, 15th Jan. 1838.

Postscript.—Perhaps the inference on the first line above is unwarranted. From a hasty examination of the record of births, marriages and deaths, since writing the above, I have ascertained the following particulars.

"Elizabeth Allerton, the daughter of Isaac Allerton, Junr., was born 27th Sept., 1653."

"Isaac Allerton, the son of Isaac Allerton Junr., was born the 11th day of June, 1655."

Elizabeth Allerton, was married to Benjamin Starr, 23d Dec., 1675. Allerton Starr, their son, was born 6th Jan. 1676-7.

Benjamin Starr died, as appears from the Probate records, in 1678. His widow, Elizabeth Allerton, was mar-

ried to Simon Heyers, afterwards written Eyre, 22d July, 1679. Isaac Eyre, their son, was born 23d Feb., 1683-4.

A friend, learned in the records, has pointed out to me the fact, that in May, 1684, "Elizabeth Eyre, formerly Elizabeth Allerton, now wife of Simon Eyre," conveyed by deed to her "dear and loving husband, Simon Eyre" the reversion of a house, &c., "which my grand-mother, Mrs. Johanna Allerton now dwells in," &c.

From all these notices, I infer, that when Isaac Allerton the younger went away, he left his daughter Elizabeth, then a child, with her grand-mother, and that if his son Isaac was then living, he took the boy with him to those parts, unknown to which he then migrated. The silence of the deed is somewhat less significant, than I supposed it to be.

[The Committee of Publication, take the liberty of making the subsequent addenda, to the preceding notice of Mr. Allerton. The two facts immediately ensuing, we have from the Journal of Winthrop. Feb. 1, 1634, "Mr. Cradock's house at Marblehead, was burnt down about midnight before, there being in it, Mr. Allerton and many fishermen, whom he employed that season." Feb. 22d. "This season, Mr. Allerton fished with eight boats, at Marblehead." This was a part of Salem till 1649. The Massachusetts Colony Records state, that March, 1635, Mr. Allerton was to be notified by the Civil Authorities, that he had leave to depart from Marblehead. It is not unlikely, that he followed Roger Williams, from Plymouth to Salem, in 1633, to sit under his ministry; and that he had subjected himself to their displeasure, for attachment to his Teacher, who was already in conflict with them. Whether Mr. Allerton compromised the difficulty with the General Court, as others did, so as to continue within their jurisdiction, is not certainly known. But as one of his vessels was employed, in the succeeding August, to transport Mr. Avery from Newbury to Marblehead, for the purpose of preaching at the latter place, it would seem as if he were permitted to remain. The Records of the Salem Church, show that he became a member of their body in 1647. This last fact appears to contradict his being ordered a seat in the meeting house of New Haven, early in the same year, where he was living in 1643, as represented by Winthrop. Still one of these events seems as likely as the other, and both of them were probably and mutually reconcilable at the time they occurred. *Pub. Com.*]

BEVERLY.

[The succeeding memoranda of Beverly, and biography of Rev. John Hale, minister there, were furnished by Robert Rantoul, Esq., at the particular request of an eminent member of our publishing Committee, in 1835. *Pub. Com.*]

Beverly was first settled as a part of Salem, by the removal of John Woodberry and William Woodberry, who were brothers, together with some other of Roger Conant's companions, from the south side to the north side of Bass river, which separates Beverly from Salem, about the year 1630. Roger Conant and John Balch, afterwards removed to the north side of the river, and were accompanied by other settlers, who were mostly from the West of England. The settlement was called "Bass river side," "Cape Ann side," and sometimes "Bass river." As early as 1649,* the settlers were so numerous, as to desire of the Church in Salem, "some course to be taken for the means of grace amongst themselves, because of the tediousness and difficulties over the water, and other inconveniences; which motion was renewed again the 22nd of the 7th Month, 1650; and the 2nd day of the 8th Month, they returned answer, that we should look out for us, some able and approved teacher to be amongst us, we still holding communion with them."† In 1656, the inhabitants on the north side of the river, were sufficiently numerous to build a meeting-house, which stood near the site of the present meeting-house of the First Parish. In this first house, Josiah Hubbard and Jeremiah Hubbard, preached for some time, and then John Hale, for about three years, during which time, the connection with the first church in Salem was preserved. On the 20th of September, 1667, a church was organized, and Rev. John Hale settled as the minister. It is noticeable, that the Records of the town begin as early as 1665, three

* Feb. 10, 1649-50.

† Church records.

years before the incorporation. This is explained by the following extract from the records of the general court.

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of that part of Salem called Bass river side, craving the favour of this Court to invest them with power to choose yearly within themselves, a fit number of persons, who may have power, as selectmen have in other places, to raise those charges that are to be defrayed by and within themselves, and for the admission of those poor or others, who desire to inhabit with them (they being to maintain them, if they fall in want), and for what other small matter and business, arising properly within themselves, fall under the cognizance of Selectmen ; also, that they may choose their Constables and Surveyors, for their Highway, and what other officers or persons the affairs abovesaid may occasion and necessitate them to employ : Yet they would be understood, that their desire is still to continue with, and be a part of the Town of Salem, viz. in bearing with them, and they with us, common Town and Country charges, in common interest and concernment, as choice of Deputies for the General Court and such like, as they have hitherto proceeded together." "The Court, on perusal of their petition, hearing what Salem Deputies said, judge meet to grant their request, provided the town of Salem do fully concur therewith and agree thereto. Which if they shall not, the Court judge it meet that they manifest the same at the next session of this Court." Whether the Court fully granted their request or not, public meetings were held in relation to the support of public worship, and for other purposes, as appears by the records. The first mention of the settlement at Bass-river side, in the records of the General Court, is in 1645, when the highway was ordered to be changed from River-head to the landing at Draper's-point, and in 1647, the inhabitants of Mackerel Cove are granted their petition, to be free from being called to watch at Salem.

On the 14th of October, 1668, the Coves was incorporated by the name of Beverly. The act of incorporation is as follows. "The Court, on perusal of this return [return on an order of notice issued to Salem], judge it meet to grant, that Bass-river be henceforth a Township of themselves, referring it to Salem, to accommodate them

with lands and bounds suitable for them, and that it be called Beverly." The first Town meeting was held on the 23d of November, 1668. It appears that Roger Conant and his friends, were dissatisfied with the name given to the town, by the Court, and soon afterwards, but without success, petitioned for its change to "Budleigh," the name of the town in England, from whence Conant came. This petition contains facts in regard to Roger Conant, and to the first settlement of Salem, which are not to be found elsewhere, and is as follows.

"*To the Honored General Court, consisting of magistrates and deputies.* (*The 28th of the 3d month*, 1671.)

The umble petition of Roger Conant, of Bass-river, alias Beverly, who hath bin a planter in New England, fortie eight years and upwards, being one of the first, if not the very first, that resolved and made good my settlement under, in matter of plantation, with my family, in this Collony of Massachusetts Bay, and have bin instrumental both for the founding and carriing on of the same, and when in the infancy thereof, it was in great hassard of being deserted. I was a means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that by my utter deniall, to goe away with them, who would have gon either for England, or mostly for Virginia, but thereupon stayed to the hassard of our lives. Now my umble suite and request is unto this honorable Court, onlie that the name of our towne or plantation may be altered or changed from Beverly, and be called Budleigh. I have two reasons, that have moved me unto this request. The first, is the great dislike and discontent of many of our people for this name of Beverly, because (wee being but a small place), it hath caused on us a constant nickname of beggarly, being in the mouths of many, and no order was given, or consent by the people to their agent for any name, until they were shure of being a towne granted in the first place.

Secondly, I being the first that had house in Salem (and neether had any hand in naming either that, or any other towne), and myself, with those that were then with me, being all from the western part of England, desire this western name of Budleigh, a market towne in Devonshire,

and neere unto the sea, as wee are heere in this place, and where myself was borne.

Now in regard to our firstnesse and antiquity, in this so famous a Collony, we should umbly request this small privileдg, with your favours and consent, to give this name abovesaid, unto our towne.

I never yet made sute or request unto the General Court for the least matter, tho' I think I might as well have done, as many others have, who have obtained much without hassard of life, or prefering the public good before their own interest, which I praise God I have done. If this my sute may find acceptation with your worships, I shall rest umble, thankfull, and my praiers shall not cease unto the throne of grace, for God's guidance and his blessing to be on all your weightie proceedings, and that iustice and righteousness may be everie where administered, and sound doctrine, truth and holiness everie where taught and practised, throughout this wilderness, to all posterity, which God grant. Amen.

Your worships' umble petitioner and servant,

ROGER CONANT.

It is likewise the umble desire and request of us, whose names ar heere underwritten, that the name of our town may be changed, as abovesaid.

William Dodg, Sen.	Peter Woodberry
William Dodg, Jun.	John Dodg
Exercise Conant	Ephraim Herrick
Edward Bishop	Osmond Traske
Lot Conant	John Sampson
Henry Bailey	William Rayment
John Rayment	Robert Hibbard
John Lovet, Sen.	Henry Herrick
William Dodg	John Black
Benjamin Balch	Isaac Hull
Cornelius Baker	Richard Haynes
Edmund Grover	John Gallop
John Hill	John Woodberry
John Grover	Zacharie Herrick
John Leech, Sen.	John Bennet
John Leech, Jun.	John Conant
Robert Morgan	John Lovett, Jun."

"June 1st, 1671. The magistrates having perused and considered this request, see no cause to alter the name of the place as desired, their brethren, the deputies, hereto consenting.

EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*

Consented to by the Deputyes.

WILLIAM TORREY, *Cleric.*"

Roger Conant, John Balch, John Woodberry and Peter Palfry, first settled in 1626, on the neck of land between Collins's Cove on the south, and the North river on the north, in Salem. Bridge Street, leading from the compact part of Salem to Essex (Beverly) Bridge, runs over this neck of land. Their first houses were near to the margin of the river, and their lots running from the river across the neck to Collins's Cove. John Balch removed to Beverly side of Bass river, in 1639. Conant and Woodberry removed at an earlier date. Palfry removed to Reading. Conant was born in Budleigh in England, in April 1591. In 1623 he came to Plymouth, thence in 1625 to Nantasket, in company with Lyford, a minister, and in the same year to Cape Ann, where he was superintendant of the fishing and planting of the Dorchester company. He there built a frame house, which was afterwards taken down, by Gov. Endicott, and removed to Salem, and is said to make a part of the old tavern, near the Court House, in Salem. In the Autumn of 1626, Conant and others removed from Cape Ann to Salem. It was owing to the firmness, resolution and perseverance of Conant, that the settlement at Salem was maintained until the arrival of Gov. Endicott, in 1628, with about a hundred colonists. Lyford accompanied Conant to Cape Ann, and from thence to Salem, but there forsook him, and went to Virginia. Conant was made a freeman, by the Court in 1630, and represented the town of Salem, in 1634. In 1636, he had a grant of 200 acres of land, at the head of Bass river, upon which he resided, and in 1671 two hundred acres in addition granted to him as an ancient planter, by General Court. His son Roger had a grant of land in Salem, in 1640, because he was the first born child in that town. Several of the descendants of the elder Roger

Conant, are now living in Beverly. He died in Beverly on the 19th of November, 1679, in the 89th year of his age.

In Farmer's Genealogical Register, his son Roger is mentioned as being alive in 1674 ; if this is correct, the following, which is carefully copied from an old bible, now in the possession of Henry Larcom of Beverly, must have been written by the widow of a third person, of the same name. "The ninth day of May, 1672, being Saturday, my dear little son Samuel Conant died, and the fifteenth day of June, being Saturday, my dear, dear, dear husband, Roger Conant died."

MEMOIR OF THE REV. JOHN HALE.

The Rev. John Hale was son of Robert and Rebeckah Hale, of Charlestown, and was born there June 3d, 1636. He was educated at Harvard College, and took his first degree in 1657. He attended to the usual course of studies, preparatory to the Christian ministry, and preached at Bass river-side, about the year 1664, that place being then a part of Salem, where a Meeting-House had been built in 1656, and public worship was attended, although those who were members, still retained their relation to the first Church in Salem. After preaching at this place, upon probation, for about three years, he was called to be their pastor, August 28th, 1667. There had been an application to the first Church at Salem, by those who had settled on the North side of Bass-river, in 1649, for permission to set up public worship by themselves. "They on the tenth of the twelfth month, 1649, (Edward Norris being the teacher), presented their request to the rest of the church, for some course to be taken for the means of grace amongst themselves, because of the tediousness and

difficulties over the water and other inconveniences, which motion was renewed again, the twenty-second of the seventh month, 1650, and the second day of the eighth month, they returned answer, that we should look out for us, some able and approved teacher to be amongst us, we still holding communion with them as before. But on farther experience, we upon the twenty-third day of the first month, 1656, presented our desires to be a church by ourselves, and after some agitation about it, when our teacher stood for us, it was put to vote, and consented unto, none appearing opposite, we protesting there was no division of judgment or affection intended, but brotherly communion. Our desire being consented unto, we proceeded to build a meeting-house on Bass river side, and we called unto us successively, to dispense the word of life unto us, Mr. Josiah* Hubbard† and Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard, and Mr. John Hale, and after almost three years experience of Mr. John Hale, our motion was again renewed, the twenty-third of the fourth month, 1667, and was as follows.—"We, whose names are underwritten, the brethren and sisters belonging to Bass-river, do present our desire to the members of the church in Salem, that with their consent, we and our children may be a church of ourselves, and we also present unto Mr. John Hale, to join with us, and to be our pastor; with the approbation of the members of the church. Roger Conant, Thomas Lothrop, William Dixy, Richard Dodge, Samuel Corning, Henry Herrick, William Woodberry, Sen., William Dodge, Sen., Humphrey Woodberry, Sen., Robert Morgan, Peter Woolfe, Richard Brackenbury, Hugh Woodberry, John Black, Josiah Roote, Sen., John Stone, Sen., Nicholas Patch, Lot Conant, Exercise Conant, John Dodge, Sen., John Hill, Ralph Ellingwood, Edward Bishopp, Sarah Conant, Bethiah Lothrop, Anna Dixy, Mary Dodge, Sen., Elizabeth Dodge, Elizabeth Corning, Anna Woodberry, Elizabeth Woodberry, Ede Herrick, Elizabeth Haskell, Ellen Brackenbury, Anna Woodberry, Jun., Mary Lovett, Martha Woolfe, Mary Dodge, Jun., Mary Woodberry, Hannah Woodberry, Hannah Baker, Abigail Hill, Sarah Leach, Elizabeth Patch, Mary Herrick, Lydia Herrick, Freegrace Black, Hannah Sallows, Bridget Luff. [49]

* Joshua

† Usually written Hobart.

Such as are members, but not in full communion, desire to be dismissed with their parents ; [here follow twenty-four names, the surnames, with two exceptions, Raiment and Hayward, may be found among the foregoing names]. This motion was answered the twenty-first day of the fifth month, as follows, viz. : This writing being read, together with the names subscribed, there was a unanimous consent, of the brethren present, unto their desire ; only it was left to the sacrament day after, when in the fullest church assembly, the consent of the whole church was signified by their votes, and so they gave their liberty to be a church by themselves, only they continued members here, until their being a church. The Lord grant his gracious presence with them. Upon this, the brethren had a meeting on the twenty-eighth day of August, and renewed their call to Mr. John Hale, that he would be pleased to accept of the office of a pastor, (whose answer was as follows. "When I look at the weight of the work which you call me unto, of which Paul cried out, who is sufficient for these things! I then looking upon my own manifold infirmities and indisposition of spirit, then unto so many discouragements, but when I duly consider the Lord's sovereignty over me, and all sufficiency for my support, I desire, when I see his work and call, to say with Esaiah, here I am, send me : and in particular, when I observe the remarkable providences of God, in bringing me hither, and paving out our way hitherto, and the room the Lord hath made for me in your hearts, (which I acknowledge with thankfulness to God and yourselves). I also look at the call of God in the present call, as a call to me ; being the more confirmed herein, by the concurrence of our apprehensions, which hath appeared in those things we had occasion to confer about, concerning our entering into and proceeding with church affairs, which I hope the Lord will enable me to practise accordingly. Wherefore, while you walk according to God's order of the Gospel, and in the stedfastness of the faith of Christ, and I see, that with a good conscience and freedom of spirit, I can carry on my work, and discharge my duty to God and man, and those that are under my care, according to the respective relation I may bear unto them, so long as the Lord is calling me to labour in this part of his vineyard, I desire to give up myself to

the Lord and his service, in the work of the ministry in this place. Requesting you to strive together with me in your prayers for me, that it may redound to his glory, the edifying of every soul that shall dwell amongst us, and for our joyful account in the day of Christ's appearance.

By me, JOHN HALE."

The twentieth of September following, these members above-mentioned, (of Salem), united together in a distinct Society, and the said Mr. Hale being dismissed from the Church of Christ at Charlestown, whereof he was a member, and recommended to the work of Christ here, concurred with them, when they solemnly made confession of their faith, and renewed their covenant unto the Lord, which was publicly and unanimously owned by them. These having proceeded thus far upon this solemn day of fasting and prayer, then immediately they proceeded to the ordination of Mr. Hale as pastor, who was ordained by the laying on of hands of the Reverend Mr. John Higginson, pastor of the Church of Salem, and of Mr. Thomas Cobbett, pastor at Ipswich, and of Antipas Newman, pastor at Wenham. Then were they owned to be a distinct church by the elders and messengers of the neighbour churches abovesaid, who gave their approbation and right hand of fellowship." In May following, a letter was received from Rev. John Higginson, of the Church in Salem, informing that all the members of the Church in Salem, living on Bass-river side, were dismissed, although not particularly named in the first instance, as being dismissed.

Previously to Mr. Hale's settlement at Bass-river side, he was married to Rebeckah, the daughter of Henry Byles, who came from Sarum in England, and settled in Salisbury as early as 1640.

She was received into the Church, by recommendation from the Church in Salisbury, September 22, 1667.

She was the mother of two children, viz.,

Rebeckah, born the twenty-eighth day of April, 1666.

Robert, born the third of November, 1668.

She died April 13th, 1683, aged 45 years.

Mr. Hale's second wife was Mrs. Sarah Noyes of Newbury; to whom he was married on the thirty-first of March, 1684. She was received into the Church, by

recommendation from the Church at Newbury, October, 1684.

She was the mother of four children, viz.,

James, born the fourteenth of October, 1685.

Samuel, born the thirteenth of August, 1687.

Joanna, born the fifteenth of June, 1689.

John, born the twenty-fourth of December, 1692.

She died May 20th, 1695, aged 41 years.

Mr. Hale's third wife, was Mrs. Elizabeth Clark, of Newbury. The intention of marriage was published July 14th, 1698, and she was received into the Church, by recommendation from the church in Newbury, September 17th, 1699, so that the marriage took place between these two last dates. She survived Mr. Hale. The compensation which the Society agreed to give Mr. Hale, for his services amongst them, was settled two years before his ordination, as will appear by the following extract from the records, dated May 15th, 1665. "Whereas we do with one consent, invite Mr. John Hale to come amongst us, in order to settling with us in the work of the ministry; for his due encouragement in the work of the Lord among us, according to II. Chronicles, xxxi.—xxxiv. ; and that he may attend upon the work of the ministry, without distraction, we do promise and engage to pay unto him, £70 per annum, and his firewood : raised amongst us by a rate in equal portions, according to our former custom. And for the manner and time of payment, that he may not have to do with particular men's portion of allowance, the bill shall not be delivered unto him, nor shall he be troubled with gathering of it in ; but two men shall be chosen year by year, to take the care of bringing it into his house, and to make up the account at the appointed time. Nehemiah x. 34. Also, whereas we have built a house for the ministry, wherein it is defective, to be furnished by us; and there are two acres of home lot (to be fenced in by us), and as much meadow land belonging to it, as commonly bears about four loads of hay. We do agree that he shall have the use of that, so long as he continues in the work of the ministry with us. Yet because it is his duty to provide for wife and children, that he may leave behind him, and our duty to have a care of him in that respect, we do therefore promise and engage, that in the case he die in the ministry

with us, that either the house and two acre home lot aforementioned, shall be his, or that which is equivalent, to be paid (according to his last will and testament), within the compass of one year after his decease. It is also agreed by all of us, that Mr. Hale shall have the use and benefit of pasturing, the time he lives with us." The first persons chosen to make the rate for Mr. Hale's maintenance, for the year 1665, were Captain Thomas Lothrop, who was slain in the battle of Bloody Brook, September 13th, 1675, (old style), Mr. Thorndike, Roger Conant, the first settler of Salem, in 1626, and in 1665, in the seventy-fifth year of his age, Samuel Corning and Joseph Rootes. At another meeting, Lieutenant William Dixy and Humphrey Woodberry, have power to appoint the time, and to give notice to the inhabitants, when they shall come together to build the house for Mr. Hale's cattle, and whoever doth not come, shall pay 3*s*. The house to be 18 feet long, 10 feet wide, and seven or eight feet stud. William Dixy arrived from England, at Cape Ann, in 1629, settled in Beverly, was admitted a freeman in 1634, and died in 1690, aged 82. There is a tradition, that the first child born on the north or Beverly side of Bass-river, was his. Humphrey Woodberry was the son of John Woodberry, the companion of Roger Conant, in effecting the settlement at Salem. Humphrey was chosen the first deacon of the Beverly Church, February 24th, 1667-8, and died about 1685. Dixy, on the death of Captain Lothrop in 1675, and at the age of 67, succeeded Lothrop as Captain of the Beverly militia company.

"It is agreed, that farmer Dodge shall be paid for his ground which is bought for the ministry, either two cows or ten pounds. Humphrey Woodberry is to have after the rate of 20*s*. an acre, for his ground, and he is to have free liberty to pass through with a cart, when he hath occassion."

November 9th, 1667. In order that Mr. Hale should be supplied with wood, four men were appointed to determine how much every one should cut and haul, and see to the delivery of it. This method of supply was not long found convenient, and in 1671, they agreed with two persons to deliver thirty cords, corded up in Mr. Hale's yard, at 6*s*. per cord. And if that was not sufficient to com-

plete the year, to bring enough more at the same rate. The year for this mode of supply, was to begin in November, 1671.

November 5th, 1677. It was voted "that the wood for Mr. Hale should be bought out of the rate or tax assessed.

June 11th, 1669. Mr. Hale's salary was reduced to £60, but a piece of land was granted him, in lieu of the £10 taken from his salary. His wood was to be brought home to him, by the last Monday in October. This arrangement probably was not acceded to by Mr. Hale, as it appears to be inconsistent with subsequent votes. August 5th, 1684. It was voted, that from this time forward, the town will pay to Mr. Hale, £64 in money, instead of the £70 and firewood as formerly. This was acceded to by Mr. Hale. The salary of £70 was payable in produce, at a regulated price. This was called *Rate Pay*, which, with the wood, perhaps was not more valuable, than £64 per annum, payable quarterly in money. By a record in the town's book, of December 1681, in regard to building a new meeting-house for the town, the sum agreed to be given, was £370 in silver money, or in lieu thereof, £550 in produce, being a difference of forty-nine per cent. between the payment in silver money, and the payment in produce at the current prices. This last agreement with Mr. Hale, was not to affect arrearages, but they were to be settled upon the former principle. In the year before this, they had agreed to collect Mr. Hale's salary by contribution, and make up the deficiency by a rate. Each person to be allowed what he contributes, and not to be burdened with the delinquency of others. About the time of Mr. Hale's last marriage, £10 was added to his salary, so that it was £74 from thence to his decease.

March 5th, 1694. The dwelling-house, and about two acres of land whereon he lived, was granted to him and his heirs for ever.

Mr. Hale appears to have taken an active part in the examination of those accused of witchcraft in 1692. March 24th, 1692, he made the prayer at the meeting-house in Salem village [now Danvers], when Goodwife Nurse, was examined before the magistrates, Hathorne and Curwen, and was also present on the 14th of May following, at the examination of Mrs. Cary. Both of these persons were

tried, condemned and executed* for the alleged crime of witchcraft. Four of his parishioners were among those who were arrested, viz. Dorcas Hoar, who was condemned but not executed, Sarah Murrel, Sussanna Rootes and Job Tookey. In October of the same year, a person belonging to Wenham, accused his beloved wife, who was then enceinte of a son, who was born on the 24th December following, of the crime of witchcraft. This brought him to a stand; he knew the virtuous character of his wife; he was perfectly satisfied of the sincerity of her piety, and of the correctness of her religious views. Her religious character had won for her a reputation among her friends and neighbors, which was an effectual security against the malignity or the superstition of her accuser. It had then become a stated controversy among the New England divines, whether the devil could afflict any one, in the shape of a good man or woman. Until this complaint against his wife, Mr. Hale held to the opinion, that the devil could not so use the shape of a sincere christian; that when through the instrumentality of any one, the devil afflicted others, it was conclusive evidence, that the person thus made use of to gratify his malignity, was in league with him, and so no longer to be permitted to live among a christian people. But after the accusation of his wife, instead of suspecting the truth and sincerity of her accusers, he adopted the opposite opinion, which would reconcile the fidelity of her accuser, with the entire innocence of his wife, and throw the whole blame upon the devil. He however contended, that the devil might and did make use of the true christian, in afflicting others, who would accuse the instrument which he made use of against their will, of his own diabolical acts. This opinion prevailed extensively, and gave a new turn to the prosecutions.

Mr. Hale's natural good sense afterwards predominated, and in 1697, he wrote a book upon the subject of witchcraft, which was soon afterwards published. In this work, he maintained, that the true evidences of witchcraft, had not been insisted upon in the late trials and examinations, and that great errors had been committed, by both magistrates and ministers.

* Though Mrs. Carey was tried and imprisoned for witchcraft, yet she was not executed. Her name was probably mistaken for Martha Cory, who was hung on a similar charge. *Pub. Com.*]

March 23d, 1697. John Higginson, minister of the First Church in Salem, aged 82 years, speaking of Mr. Hale's book on Witchcraft, says: "As for myself, being under the infirmities of a decrepit old age, I stirred little abroad, and was much disenabled (both in body and mind) from knowing and judging of occurrents and transactions of that time: but my Reverend brother, Mr. Hale, having for above thirty years, been pastor of the Church at Beverly (but two miles from Salem, where the trials were), was frequently present, and was a diligent observer of all that passed, *and being one of a singular prudence and sagacity, in searching into the narrows of things:* he hath (after much deliberation) in this treatise, related the substance of the case as it was, and given reasons from scripture against some of the principles and practices, then used in the trials of witchcraft; and said something also in a positive way, and shewing the right application, that is to be made of the whole, and all this *in such a pious and modest manner*, as cannot be offensive to any, but may be generally acceptable to all the lovers of truth and peace." Mr. Hale, in the preface to his book, says, "I have been present at several examinations and trials, and knew sundry of those that suffered upon that account in former years, and in this last affair, and so have more advantages than a stranger, to give account of these proceedings. I have been from my youth, trained up in the knowledge and belief of most of those principles, I here question, as unsafe to be used. The first person* that suffered on this account in New England, about fifty years since, was my neighbor, and I heard much of what was charged upon her, and others in those times; and the reverence I bore to aged, learned and judicious persons, caused me to drink in their principles in these things, with a kind of implicit faith. But observing the events of that sad catastrophe in the year 1692, I was brought to a more strict scanning of the principles I had imbibed, and by *scanning*, to *question*, and by *questioning* at length to *reject* many of them, upon the reasons shewed in the ensuing discourse. No truth is more certain to a man, than that which he had formerly doubted or denied, and is recovered from his error, by the convincing

* Margaret Jones of Charlestown, executed, 1648.

evidence of scripture and reason. I have had a deep sense of the sad consequences of mistakes, in matters capital; and their impossibility of recovering when compleated; and what grief of heart it brings to a tender conscience, to have been unwittingly encouraging of the sufferings of the innocent. And I hope, a zeal to prevent for the future such sufferings, is pardonable, although there should be much weakness, and some errors in the pursuit thereof." It was honorable to the character of Mr. Hale, that he so far overcame the prejudices of his early education, and that he was able to combat the pride of opinion. Not merely of opinions entertained, but those which had been extensively acted upon, under circumstances of the most intense interest, among his neighbors and friends. That he changed his opinions, was no more than others did, but it *was more*, that he came out before the world, and admitting his own error, with great candor and fairness,* proved by the strongest arguments in his power, the fallacy of those principles which had governed his own conduct, as well as that of many of the principal men with whom he coöperated, in the horrid scene which had just passed. He was actuated by the soundest principles of true Philosophy:—he doubted, he questioned, he scanned, he rejected and was recovered from his errors, by the convincing evidence of scripture and of reason. Bigotry and superstition, if it had in some degree enthralled his mind, no longer maintained its hold.

An examination of the Church records during the whole period of Mr. Hale's ministry, furnishes convincing evidence of his liberality. Nothing is there to be found, indicative of any interference with freedom of opinion. Censures of the Church, for immorality of life, were not unfrequent in those days, but none appear on record for errors of opinion. The liberality of his practice, in relation to the administration of the ordinances of the Christian Religion, has generally been followed in the first Church in Beverly up to the present time. He was ready to make pecuniary sacrifices, when the circumstances of his people seemed to demand it. Thus in 1676, when the whole colony were suffering the greatest distress from King Phillip's war, Mr.

* Others did the same.

Hale ordered the selectmen to dispose of £6, about one twelfth of his year's salary, for public uses ; such as fortification, ammunition, and country rates. In 1683, he gave £5 towards building the second meeting-house. His labors in regard to the secular concerns of his people, were freely bestowed. Of this, the town records bear frequent testimony. When in 1680, the inhabitants between the Merrimac and Naumkeag rivers, were thrown into great consternation and distress, by the heirs or assigns of John Mason, laying claim to all the lands between those two rivers, including the whole town of Beverly, as well as several other towns, Mr. Hale was appointed, with others, to defend the town's rights, to memorialize the King and the General Court, and to perform various other services, which the exigency of the case required. The memorial of the town upon this occasion, to the General Court, was as follows, viz. :

The petition of the inhabitants of Beverly in the County of Essex, unto the Honorable General Court of the Massachusetts, sitting at Boston, February 22nd, 1681, humbly sheweth, that we the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign Lord, King Charles the Second, King of England, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, having seen his Royal command, by his letters, bearing date September 30th, 1680, to the inhabitants between Merrimack and Naumkeag rivers, requiring them to make improvement of their lawful defence for the lands they possess, before his highness in Council, and having intimated that we may possibly be concerned in Mr. Mason's claim, do humbly declare, that we know not by his Majesty's letters, that we are comprised under that command, seeing there be sundry rivers named Naumkeag, and we know not which the letter refers unto. We humbly conceive this answer might suffice, until Mr. Mason, or some other in his behalf, do shew us his grant, or some exemplification thereof, whereby we may know whether we be claimed by him or no. That we may not seem unto such as suppose us to be comprehended, to be defective in our allegiance, we add that we being many, have our several particular titles to produce, if Robert Mason, Esq. put us upon it, and he that hath but one acre, expects a fair legal trial, for all that he can justly produce to plead for it.

So that we can produce quires, yea reams of paper, which we conceive it would be presumption in us to desire or expect our dread sovereign, to be diverted from the weighty affairs of three kingdoms for the hearing of, for we have had above fifty years quiet possession, and entered upon the place, with the good liking of the Indians, the ancient inhabitants of this country. We have ventured our lives and estates, and worn out much time and strength, in the subduing a wilderness for the increasing his Majesty's dominions and customs. And in the late wars with the heathen, have carried our lives in our hands to defend our possessions, with loss of about twelve English lives of our town, and expended some hundreds of pounds, to maintain our lands, and in this time of above fifty years, neither Mr. Mason, nor any for him, did either take possession, or disburse estate, or made demand of our lands, or expended one penny to defend them. We humbly conceive his Majesty's royal justice intends, not to put us to the charges of sending our deeds and evidences three thousand miles, before any demand of Mr. Mason upon the place, to try at least, whether we will own the lands as his, without putting us to so much charge, but that which we humbly pray for is, that whoever lays any claim to our lands, that the title may be tried upon the place, by his Majesty's government here.

First, because when our last messengers were in England, the Lord Chief Justice and others, did judge it equal, that whoever laid claim to any soil within the limits of the Patent, his title should be tried by his Majesty's government upon the place, and seeing his Majesty was graciously pleased to confirm this determination, and require all parties concerned to acquiess therein, we humbly plead the benefit of that determination.

Secondly, our Charter gives power to the government and company of the Massachusetts, to make such laws and ordinances for the good and welfare of the said company, and for the government and ordering of the said lands and plantations, and people inhabiting and to inhabit the same, as to them from time to time shall be thought mete, now according to the laws and ordinances made by this Royal authority and direction, have we a title to plead for our respective possessions, humbly pleading our title may be

tried by those laws, by which our lands are to be governed, according to our Charter.

Thirdly, our Gracious Sovereign was pleased, by his letters, dated February 15th, 1660, thus to signify his pleasure, viz.: "As we consider New England to be one of the chiefest, having enjoyed and grown up in a long and orderly establishment, so we shall not come behind any of our Royal predecessors, in a just encouragement and protection of all our loving subjects there." And we, by this our orderly establishment, did then hold our lands, and by the said orderly establishment, have since those letters, held them twenty years more, and do humbly desire and expect to be tried by those laws, here made, which are the means of your and our orderly establishment, and a branch of that just encouragement and protection, which we hope for, by the gracious promise of our dread Sovereign. Wherefore our humble request to this honoured Court, is that if Robert Mason, Esq., pretends a title to any lands in our possession, you will be instrumental in our behalf, to present for these our righteous pleas for the lands we possess, for the just improvement of our lawful defence before his Majesty in Council. Interceding that his Royal care and tenderness, expressed toward us his meanest subjects, may be still continued to confirm our long enjoyed privileges, granted by his Royal Highness and Royal predecessors, and we resolve through the grace of God, with our persons and estates, to approve ourselves his loyal subjects, even to the death. Praying to the throne of Grace, for the chiefest blessings of heaven and earth, to be showered upon his Royal head and heart, and remain your humble petitioners. In the name and by the order of the town.

Paul Thorndike.
John Dodge.
John Hill.
Exercise Conant.
Thomas West.

At a town-meeting, January 7, 1681, "the *Rev. Mr. Hale*, Captain Dixy and Mr. John Dodge were chosen by the town, to meet at Ipswich, the second Wednesday in February, to present such pleas and evidences for the title

of our land, as the town hath agreed upon in writing, and according thereunto, to join with such others as then shall meet, to draw up something to be presented to his Majesty, by such messengers as the General Court shall send."

April 20th, 1682. At a town meeting "*Mr. John Hale*, Farmer William Dodge, Samuel Corning, Sen., John Rayment, Sen., Exercise Conant and John Hill were chosen to go to Ipswich, on the 21st, to take notice of an address framed unto his Majesty, in the name and behalf of themselves and others, called parties unto Mr. Mason's claim."

March 13th, 1683. At a town meeting, "Lieut. Thorndike was chosen to go to Ipswich, to meet with others deputed by their respective towns, the last Tuesday of March, to consider and advise what may be best and most proper to be done for the securing of our lands and possessions."

In 1690, Mr. Hale was employed as a Chaplain, in the expedition of that year, to Canada. During his absence, his son Robert, who was graduated at Harvard College in 1686, and afterwards became a Physician, supplied the place of his Father, in preaching and the performance of other clerical duties, from August 4th, until his return, Nov. 20th. A strong motive with Mr. Hale, for engaging in this military office, was, that a company of soldiers was raised under the command of Captain William Raymond, among his parishioners, and he chose to follow them, to watch over the morals of so large a portion of the young men of his flock.

A township of land was granted to reward Captain Raymond and his soldiers. About forty-four years after this unfortunate expedition, December 31st, 1734, on the petition of Robert Hale, grandson of the minister, John Hale, said Robert then being the representative from Beverly in the General Court, three hundred acres of land were granted to the heirs of John Hale, on account of his services in said expedition.

There are several instances mentioned on the town records, besides those that have been particularly mentioned, of the kindness and liberality of Mr. Hale's parishioners towards him, in making him various grants, and providing for his better accommodation ; a sure indication

of the acceptableness of his services, and an evidence of his public spirit.

Mr. Hale died on the 15th of May, 1700, in the sixty-fourth year of his age, and in the 36th year of his ministry, including the three years he preached to his people, before he was ordained.

He was buried in the Parish burying ground, and the place is still marked by a stone, with the following inscription, viz. "Here lyes ye body of ye Reverend Mr. John Hale, a pious and faithful minister of ye Gospel, and pastor of ye first gathered Church of Christ, in this town of Beverly, who rested from his labours on the 15th day of May, Anno Domine, 1700, in the 64th year of his age."

The estate on which he lived, is still owned by his descendants and his dwelling-house, though much altered and enlarged, still remains.

I will conclude this notice of Mr. Hale, with one more extract from the town records, relating to his last sickness.

"March 22d, 1704-5, the Selectmen allowed Jonathan Dodge five shillings, for his *great care and pains,* in fetching Mr. John Hale from Charlestown in a coach, and Jonathan Herrick is allowed five shillings, for being *helpful* on the same occasion."

MEMOIR OF THE REV. ABIEL HOLMES, D.D. LL.D., &c., BY REV. W. JENKS, D.D.

IT has fallen to the lot of very few members of the American clergy, to be more extensively or more favorably known, than our late respected associate. His diversified connections with various literary and benevolent societies, his highly respectable standing as a divine, placed in contact for nearly half a century, with the advantages of our first seminary of learning, and in habits of acquaintance with its successive governors and teachers; and, perhaps, more than all, the nature and value of those researches, to which he devoted so industriously, whatever leisure he might possess from the occupations of a laborious and most responsible profession, served to confer on him this well-deserved distinction: because, as has been justly remarked, "in all ages, the writing of HISTORY has employed the ablest men of all nations; and to this day, hardly any writer enjoys a greater, a more extensive, and what will probably be a more lasting reputation, than *a good historian.*' *

Our departed friend and fellow-laborer was descended paternally of a family which resided from an early period in Woodstock, a town formerly belonging to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, but now lying in Connecticut; and on the female side from the old Bay family of LATHROP, or LOTHROPP,† the first bearer of which name in New England, was minister of Scituate. The name of HOLMES is probably of the pure Saxon derivation; but to which of the English families who bear it, and whose distinct armorial insignia are, I think, full fifteen in number, his own is traceable, is not clear. It is perhaps sufficient to know, that he inherited a good constitution from his ancestors, and what merit now to be termed admirable developments

* PRIESTLEY. Lectures on Hist. L. I.
† Coll. Mass. Hist. Soc. Letter of Rev. Dr. LATHROP.

of natural talent, in a person of the middle size, and well-proportioned, and of a temperament and countenance highly indicative of moderation and kindness.

His father was Dr. DAVID HOLMES, a practising physisician, who served during the war in Canada, for three campaigns, as a captain in the regiment of Col. FITCH, and left his "orderly book," of four volumes, to be subsequently quoted in the American Annals of his distinguished son. At the revolution, he was one of the earliest engaged in the struggle, having "joined the army in his professional character as a physician, on the first intelligence of the battle at Lexington, and continuing in the service until the fourth year of the war, when, worn down with the labors and fatigues of the camp, he returned home, and shortly after expired, in his 58th year." *

The son was born on the 24th of December, 1763, and at the time of his father's death, had reached his sixteenth year, having then nearly prepared for his collegiate course. Of his early propensities and pursuits, no traces are in possession of the writer; but that his youth was marked by sedulous application, and bore besides the distinguishing impressions of serious religion, there is good reason to believe, for he became a member of the church in Yale College, "on the first sabbath in March, 1781," having been so admitted by President STILES, who had then been at the head of the college for nearly three years. The period of his college life, was one of peculiar trials and distress, on account of public affairs, New Haven having been made the scene of predatory warfare, and the anniversary commencement exercises, having been for years suspended by "the gloomy state of the country." †

Mr. HOLMES was graduated Sept. 10th, 1783, and it appears, although I am not able to give the date, that he must soon after have accepted the appointment of Tutor. During this year it was, that a state of things deeply interesting in a religious view, and equally so as to its general effects on character and usefulness, as respects the members of the literary institution, occurred in Yale College; which, as his account of it exhibits the principles and feelings of an evangelical minister of Christ, and con-

* See vol. II, p. 85, and App. note 3, last ed.
† BALDWIN's Hist. of Yale Coll. Life of STILES, pp. 261—265.

cern my own personal friend, I shall indulge myself with relating in his own well-weighed but decisive language. "In the course of this summer, considerable additions were made to the college church. It had never been so large since its foundation, as it was rendered by these accessions. The President, and the Professor of Divinity, had previously entertained great solicitude for this little flock, which was almost entirely composed of members of the Senior class, who were soon to take leave of the University. The admission of eighteen new members from the other classes, within one month, was justly viewed as a very interesting and joyful event. If the importance of Religion, in a seminary of learning, is duly considered, either as it respects the students themselves, or the community, in which they are becoming formed to act an influential part; what has now been recorded, will not be judged too inconsiderable for preservation. The writer, at least, must charge himself with impiety, should he forget an event, of which he was an eye-witness, and which, he is certain, *caused many thanksgivings to God.*—In a late interview with a worthy minister, who, at the time here referred to, was a student at college, and who knows the subsequent history of his fellow-students, who then joined the college church; on a particular inquiry of him, concerning their characters, it appeared that, without any known exception, they have steadily adhered to their early profession. *By their fruits*, said the Saviour, *ye shall know them.* Will any, after all, call this *enthusiasm?* Would to God, there were more of it in the world! This is an event, which, to use the language of the excellent Dr. DODDRIDGE,* in a similar case, 'I behold with equal wonder and delight; and which, if a nation should join in deriding it, I would adore as the finger of GOD.'" † Such a state of things has, happily, since this period, not unfrequently been found in many of the now multiplied literary institutions of the United States; ‡ and it cannot be doubted by any believer of the Bible, that were all seminaries of learning thoroughly imbued with an influence genuinely religious, the hopes of

* "Life of Colonel GARDINER."
† Life of STILES, pp. 286, 287.
‡ See publications of the American Education Society, &c.

mankind, and peculiarly of our own country, would be far brighter and more cheering.

It appears that Mr. HOLMES preached first at Midway in Georgia, the year after leaving college, in the month of August. His settlement with the church and congregation there, was accomplished in 1785 ; and he continued to discharge the duties of his ministry among this people, whom he always remembered with affection, and to whose character he bore an ample testimony, until June, 1791, when ill-health, probably the effect of the climate, compelled him to leave the state. He had, the year before, become a son-in-law of President STILES, having married his daughter Mary, with whom, however, he lived in that union for five years only.*

The first congregational church in Cambridge had become vacant by the death of Rev. Mr. HILLIARD, in 1790. Mr. HOLMES was invited to supply his place, and, having accepted the invitation, was installed as pastor, Jan. 25th, 1792. This relation he sustained, until it was dissolved by a mutual ecclesiastical council, Sept. 26th, 1832, after a continuance of forty years.

In this memoir, the records of his long and useful ministry will not be expected. They are written, as are those of many other faithful servants of Christ, on the *fleshly tables* of multitudes of hearts, to appear at a future day. But a cultivation of a taste for learning, and the making of important acquisitions in science, and the exercise of a love of literature, as they are the product of a liberal education, so they cannot fail to occupy those intervals of a scholar's life, which are left him for professional engagements. That the duties of his ministry were discharged with industrious fidelity, and with punctuality, zeal and perseverance, has ever been acknowledged. That he was able to give attention to collateral pursuits, of a character not strictly within the necessary scope of a clergyman's studies, is in a great measure owing, doubtless, to a superior improvement of time, as well as to a peculiar bias of mind, or inclination to inquiries of a character other than solely theological.

But perhaps even this appearance of apology, is alto-

* Mrs. MARY HOLMES died at Cambridge, Aug. 29th, 1795.

gether uncalled for. God, in his wise providence, "shapes our ends," and leads us in a way we had not known. The death of his revered father-in-law, in the spring of the year 1795, placed in his hands, by a special bequest, no less than forty volumes of the valuable manuscripts, which contained the results of the learned president's extensive inquiries. This circumstance, possibly, gave no inconsiderable direction to his own. President Stiles had indulged in very diversified researches. These had been pursued with characteristic ardor, and sustained by an extensive and remarkably inquisitive correspondence with men, high in literary attainment, both at home and abroad, that is, within the bounds of the British dominions, and without them: for, at the time in which they were commenced, Mr. Stiles looked on England, like every other distinguished Anglo-American, with strong filial attachment, and felt himself specially entitled to the enjoyment of a free and full intercourse with all the subjects of its government, while he cultivated similar dispositions toward all members of the republic of learning, at large.

"On the receipt of this cabinet of manuscripts, above a year after the president's death," observes Mr. Holmes, "I began, with what diligence my health and professional labors would admit, to examine them; and judged, in the result, that they furnished copious materials for the biography of their author." This biography, "in compliance with the wishes and advice of several judicious friends of the president," he undertook. His "other advantages were, an intimate acquaintance with him, obtained by a residence of four years at the University, as his pupil; a subsequent residence there, as a tutor; a correspondence with him for several years, and an alliance with his family." Hence then he adds, "hoping that such a work would subserve the interests of religion and of science, I no longer hesitated to undertake it"—judging that "THE UNION OF PIETY WITH LEARNING, FORMS THE SUBLIMEST HUMAN CHARACTER." *

In this spirit was the Life of President Stiles written, and published as early as May, 1798. And, to my own mind, it scarcely admits a doubt, that, whatever were the

* Pref. to Life of Pres. Stiles.

taste, patriotism, industry, piety and scholarly acquisitions of the biographer, when he girded himself to this work, his progress in it, and contemplation of the venerated subject of it, must have tended, in no inconsiderable degree, to fix his taste, to enlighten and animate his patriotism, to inspirit his industry, to warm and sublimate his piety, and to fill him with desires, emulative of the kindred virtues and accomplishments of his relative. Add to this, the manuscripts themselves were exceedingly rich in local references, philosophical observations, historical details, biographical notices, statistical remarks and tables, and aspirations and plans of patriotic devotion. President STILES had, nearly eighty years ago, addressed distinguished men on the subject of the history of these Colonies, and solicited communications. He sought interviews with observing scholars, in order to increase his own information, and received, from many, such communications as might at a subsequent date be moulded into history, whether civil, natural or ecclesiastical. As early as 1760 we find them, and in 1768, the celebrated Dr. CHAUNCY, of Boston, addressed him a letter of the nature alluded to, and which is now published in our Collections,* giving "a sketch of eminent men in New England," and intimating the purpose to which such notices were intended to contribute. How valuable to our friend, these ample materials were, let the numerous references and quotations of his great and principal work evince.

While the Life of President STILES was in the press, Mr. HOLMES was elected a member of this Society.† With what efficiency he engaged as a fellow-laborer, is well known to those of his associates who yet remain, and might appear from a simple recital of his official appointments, or literary contributions, or individual exertions. As early as the publication of even the second volume of our Collections, his name appears first, with those of Rev. Dr. HARRIS, the Hon. J. QUINCY, now President of the University, and the lamented Professor MCKEAN, on "the Committee of publication." Similar service also he performed, in assisting to prepare the fifth, sixth, seventh,

* Vol. x. 1st Series, p. 154. This volume is enriched with several other letters of similar kind.

† April 24th, 1798.

eighth and tenth volumes of the first series ; and in 1813, succeeded the Rev. Dr. Eliot, as Corresponding Secretary—an office he continued to fill, until 1834, when he felt it necessary to resign the charge.

The life of President Stiles, was not absolutely the first publication of our respected associate, although it attracted toward him no slight regard. He had published in 1787, his own pastoral Address, delivered at his ordination in Georgia. In 1795, he published likewise a Sermon on the National Thanksgiving appointed for the 19th of February of that year. He was also known, by a few friends at least, as principal contributor to an entertaining little volume of poetical effusions, "printed, not published," and termed the "Family Tablet," having been produced by members of that endeared association. This, as all his other literary productions, evinces an elegant, well-harmonised mind, a correct, classical taste, a playful, innocent fancy, under subjection however to a severe judgment. His style was pure, and not inharmonious ; precise, but neither stiff nor harsh. In several single Discourses, he occasionally appeared before the community, during almost the whole of his professional life ; and I well remember the approving sentence concerning them uttered by an accurate and distinguished scholar, of totally opposite sentiments in theology, but a strict and impartial scrutinizer of men and manners—a respected and efficient associate in our Society—indeed one of its founders, the Rev. Dr. Freeman. More than once he expressed to me the language of warm applause, when speaking of Dr. Holmes's published Sermons.

But he meditated a greater literary labor. How early his thoughts had been directed to it, I have no means of knowing ; yet at the close of our ninth volume, for 1804, which contains two of his historical communications, he having previously published his history of Cambridge in a Centurial Sermon, is a "Literary Notice," purporting that "a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, has it in contemplation to publish a work, to be entitled American Annals. It will commence with the discovery of America, in 1492, and extend to the present time; and is designed to give a concise history of the most important events, that have taken place within that period, on the

continent of North and South America, and in the West India islands ; and of such events, in foreign parts, as had special relation to this country, or ultimately affected its interests."* Further details of the plan are given, and pledges made—all of which have, it is believed, been redeemed to the full.

In 1805, this work appeared in two volumes, 8vo., and it may perhaps be said, more than answered the public expectation. To prepare it, must have been a task truly Herculean. So diversified are its materials in character ; so scattered in their several localities ; so well presented, with accuracy, neatness and impartiality ; that it assumed at once and has uniformly maintained the character of one of the first standard works of our country. In fact, I know of no work of the kind which ranks higher. For it is by no means a meagre detail of facts ; but, as was originally proposed, "while it relates events in the order of time, on the plan of chronology, it dilates on articles of peculiar importance, after the manner of history, and gives authorities with precision." It established, at once, a high reputation for its author.

Were it not for the familiarity of the fact, which almost every writer has had occasion to observe, from the orator of Rome to our own day, that, when the mind is fixed on a certain object of inquiry, and pursues it with reference to its kindred subjects, these appear to multiply indefinitely ; we should be absolutely astonished at the variety of information contained in these volumes. But facts and remarks accumulated, doubtless, almost insensibly ; and the ever vigilant attention of the annalist was perpetually securing them for their appropriate place, with an industry and modesty happily embodied in the simple but significant motto that adorns the title page.†

The first edition of the work was reviewed in England, a few years after its publication, with, on the whole, kindly expressions of approbation, especially in relation to the part describing the affairs of the United States, in which, says the reviewer, "it displays great industry and research, and is peculiarly valuable." But, although, after the usual

* See the whole "Notice" on the last page of Hist. Coll. vol. IX.
† "Suum quæque in annum referre." TACITUS.

style of British reviewers of American works, until recently, the language of the article abounds with sarcasms in relation to our countrymen, and ludicrous misrepresentations, no reference whatever is made by Dr. HOLMES, in his second edition of the Annals, to these strains of vituperative jealousy; but, with Christian discretion and dignity, qualities observable in him in all his intercourse, public or private, with his fellow-men, he only reciprocates the feelings of paternal affection and esteem between the literati of the two nations.*

An edition of this work was published in England, in 1813, (as is said, for I have not seen a copy,) while the two nations were waging an unnatural war. Since that period, more of mutual respect has appeared, and far less of bitter criticism has dishonored the periodical literature of the mother country, in reference to our publications. It is to be hoped, the time is not far remote, when every trace of it will be obliterated and forgotten.

In 1829, the new and greatly enlarged edition, improved by the insertion of many articles of information, which had not before been accessible,† was printed by the author at Cambridge, under his own laborious and accurate supervision; leaving the work as it appears destined to descend to our posterity—among whom its value will be enhanced by the minuteness with which it points out original documents and authorities, to aid the researches of our future historians.

But great injustice would be done to our venerated friend, were he recollected only as an eminent contributor to the historical knowledge of his beloved country, high as that praise may be regarded. He aimed higher, in being an efficient helper with those who were seeking the extension and establisment of advantages, religious and moral, as well as literary. Hence, about the commencement of the present century, he united with a few friends in founding the "Society for promoting Christian knowledge, of which he was the respected President at the time of his death, having previously sustained the office of its first Secretary. Of the "Board of Commissioners of the Soci-

* See the concluding paragaaph of Pref. to 2d. ed.

† From the EBELING collection in the library of our University, and additions to the Athenæum, &c. See the account in the Preface before cited.

ety in Scotland for promoting Christian knowledge," formed in 1787, he was Vice-president. In the "American Education Society," which enjoys an influence so extensive and so salutary, as to have thus far aided nearly three thousand young men in the various stages of education, he was from the first a Director, and was active in its formation.* He was a member of the Boards of Trust of the Theological Institution at Andover, of Phillips's Academy in the same place, and of the Bible Society of Massachusetts; beside his being a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, of the Philosophical Society of Philadelphia, and of the American Antiquarian Society, his connection with our own Institution, and his sustaining a place, while he remained pastor of the first church in Cambridge, in the Board of Overseers of the University.

Considering his habits of scrupulous attention to every demand of duty, his punctuality and conscientiousness, it seems difficult to find the time for discharging such an extent of obligations; since very few if any of our offices or situations are sinecures.

In addition to the above, and the various publications of which a list will be given at the close of this memoir, Dr. Holmes delivered in 1817 a series of Lectures, in the

* I take liberty here to transcribe a part of the notice of Dr. Holmes's death, from the Appendix to the last Report of this Society, containing a view of the character of our regretted friend, in which, on revisal, my judgment still wholly acquiesces. It is extracted from a Sermon, delivered at Cambridge on the Lord's day after his decease, founded on Heb. ch. 13, v. 7. "The important character of pastor, leader and guide, Dr. Holmes sustained with high respectability, much consistency, uniformity and meekness. He was a ruler in the Church of Christ, 'not as lording it over God's heritage,' with arbitrary power, but governing by persuasive influence, and evangelical gentleness, combined with the constraining dignity of a firm adherence to principle. Few pastors, or men, have in my judgment, combined these two characters more successfully together. Studiously polite to all with whom he conversed, and scrupulously attentive to every demand of propriety, both in private and public life, he could use consistently, what no bigot or zealot can, the memorable language of the apostle—'we were gentle among you as a nurse cherisheth her children;' and with equal justice could say, in regard to any supposable demand, interfering with his sense of sacred duty, from any quarter, 'to whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with you.'

"This blending of moderation and modesty with firmness, and decision of character, where decision and firmness are needed, constitutes, if I mistake not, an enviable, or rather a desirable distinction. Especially in these days of denunciation, estrangement, and obloquy, of superficial attainments and loud professions, of headlong rashness in enterprise, and boldness and confidence in assertion, we can hardly prize too highly, the peaceful, laborious, faithful and humble follower and minister of Jesus Christ, who is learned without vanity or dogmatism, pious without cant or fitfulness, and charitable without ostentation. And such, if I mistake not was, our beloved and lamented friend. Never in extremes, or changeable with extravagance, his deportment and character united, in no common degree, the gentleman, the scholar, and the Christian."

chapel of the University at Cambridge, on the Ecclesiastical History of his country, especially New England. Often did I urge on him, as doubtless did others of his friends, a preparation of these Lectures for the public view, in a more permanent form. And this he had, indeed, in a very great measure effected, by remoulding the Lectures into chapters, and making other alterations with special reference to the object. But they still remain in manuscript, although I cannot doubt that their appearance, were it found practicable and expedient, would be gratifying and profitable to a large portion of the community.

Of his first marriage, no children were left. He had four of the second marriage, three of whom, with their respected mother, daughter of the late Hon. Oliver Wendell, Esq., survive him.

Dr. Holmes died at Cambridge, in Christian peace and hope, June 4th, 1837. The following is a list of his publications, arranged in order of time.

1787. Proceedings of Council at ordination of Rev. Abiel Holmes, at Midway, Georgia, with the pastoral Address.
1795. National Thanksgiving Sermon, Feb. 19.
1798. Life of President Stiles, 8vo.
1799. Sermon at ordination of Rev. Jonathan Whitaker, Sharon.
" National Fast Sermon, April 25th, delivered at Boston and Cambridge.
" Sermon on the death of His Excellency, Increase Sumner.
1800. Dec. 29th, Sermon on the death of Washington.
" Feb. 22d, Sermon recommending the counsel of Washington.
1801. Jan. 4th, Century Sermon, giving the history of Cambridge. This was published also in the 7th volume of our Collections.
" Sermon at the ordination of Rev. Otis Lane, Sturbridge.
1803. Sermon at ordination of Rev. David Kendall, Hubbardston.
1804. Memoir of Stephen Parmenius of Buda, with his latin poem translated ; also, Memoir of the

Moheagan Indians; both published in vol. 9th of Hist. Coll.

" Sermon before the Massachusetts Missionary Society, May 29.

" Sermon on the death of Rev. President Willard.

1805. American Annals, 2 vols. 8vo.

" Sermon at Ordination of Rev. W. Bascom, Fitchburgh.

1806. Dec. 22d, Sermon at Plymouth, anniversary of landing of forefathers.

1807. Sermon at funeral of Rev. Dr. Tappan.

1808. Nov. 3d, Discourse before the Society for propagating the Gospel among Indians and others in North America.

1809. Apr. 6th, Fast Sermon.

" Dec. 25th, Christmas Sermon, at Cambridge.

1810. Sermon on the validity of Presbyterian ordination, at the Dudleian Lecture, in the University, May 9.

1811. Sermon at ordination of Rev. John Bartlett, Marblehead.

1812. Sermon at inauguration of Rev. E. Pearson, LL.D. Professor of Sacred Rhetoric in the Theological Seminary, Andover.

1813. Jan. 1st, Discourse at Boston, before the Society for Foreign Missions.

" July 5th, Address before the Washington Benevolent Society at Cambridge.

1814. Jan. 19th, Sermon at ordination of Rev. J. B. Gannett, Cambridgeport.

" Biographical Memoir of Rev. John Lothrop, in Hist. Coll. vol. 1, 2d series.

" October 24th, Address before the American Antiquarian Society, Boston.

1815. Historical sketch of the English Translations of the Bible.

1818. Sept. 17th, Discourse on opening the new Almshouse at Cambridge.

1819. Sermon before the Massachusetts Convention of Congregational Ministers.

1820. Dec. 24th, Two discourses at Cambridge on the completion of the second century from the land-

ing of the Forefathers at Plymouth. Printed, 1821.

1822. Sermon at funeral of Rev. Dr. Osgood, Medford.

1825. Sermon at ordination of Rev. Hosea Hildreth, Gloucester.

1826. Memoir of the French Protestants who settled in Oxford, Mass. in 1686, &c. Printed also in vol. II, 3d Series, Hist. Coll. 1830.

1829. Annals of America, from the Discovery by Columbus in 1492, to the year 1826; 2d (American) ed. 2 vols. 8vo.

OLD AMERICAN COINS.

[The following account of some American coins, issued before the establishment of the present government, by some of the States, was furnished by Doctor JAMES MEASE, of Philadelphia].

No. 1. This coin is larger than a half cent. On one side it has thirteen ribs or bars which run parallel to, and are equi-distant from each other. On the other side are the letters U. S. A. the S. being of larger size, running across the other two letters. It has no date nor any other inscription.

No. 2. On one side a head surrounded by "Georgius. Dei. Gratia. Rex." On the other side is a rose and the following inscription, "Rosa. Americana. Utile. Dulci. 1722.

No. 3. On one side a chain of *thirteen* circular links running around the face of the coin. In the centre a circle, having upon it the words "We are one," and around these words, "United States." On the other side there is a sun at meridian height, looking down upon a dial, beneath which appear these words, "Mind your business." The word "*Fugio*," and the date 1787 also appear on the same side of the coin.

No. 4. On one side the American Eagle, having on its breast a shield, with the word CENT upon it. Around the face of the Coin is "MASSACHUSETTS 1788." On the other side is an Indian at full length with his bow and arrow, and the word COMMONWEALTH.

No. 5. On one side a sheaf of wheat, and the words "PEACE AND PLENTY;" on the other, a full length portrait of Fame blowing her trumpet, and these words "FOR THE CONVENIENCE OF THE PUBLIC." There is a date upon it, but the third figure is so badly done, as to leave a doubt whether it is 1784, or some earlier period.

No. 6. On one side a Sun, with *thirteen* stars around it, and the words "NOVA CONSTELLATIO;" on the other, the letters U. S. surrounded by a vignette, and the words "LIBERTAS ET JUSTITIA 1785."

No. 7. Is the Jersey Half-penny, having on one side a shield, surrounded by the words "E. PLURIBUS UNUM;" on the other a Horse's head and a plough, with the words "NOVA CÆSAREA, 1785."

No. 8. On one side a head and the word "AUCTORI CONNEC," on the other a female figure very much in the form of a gingerbread child, holding what may be an olive branch in one hand, and a bow and arrow in the other, with the date below it of 1787. This is the old farthing of our boyhood.

No. 9. Has on one side a head, and the words "Georgius III Rex." On the opposite side is a shield cut into quarters, containing respectively the coats of arms of England, Scotland, Ireland and Virginia, surmounted with a crown, and surrounded with "Virginia, 1773." A coin similar to this was a year or two ago dug up in a garden, and with the description given of it, there was published the following history.

The following historical facts are here distinctly referred to. During the usurpation of Cromwell, the colony of Virginia refused to acknowledge his authority, and declared itself independent. Shortly after, finding that Cromwell threatened to send a fleet and army to reduce Virginia to subjection, and fearing the ability of this feeble state to withstand this force, she sent over in a small ship, a messenger to Charles II., then an exile, at Breda, in Flanders. Charles accepted the invitation to come over, and be king of Virginia, and was on the eve of embarking, when he was recalled to the throne of England. As soon as he was restored to the crown of England, in gratitude for the loyalty of Virginia, he caused her coat of arms to be quartered with those of England, Scotland, and Ireland, as an independent member of the Empire. The above coin is clearly confirmatory of these facts. Hence the origin of the phrase "Old Dominion," frequently applied to Virginia.

The coin No. 2, resembles very much, one lately found in Charleston, and of which the following account was published in the Charleston papers:

CURIOUS COIN.—The workmen in preparing the foundation of St. Phillips Church, have found a Coin, the age of which is now 113 years, with the head of George the First. The inscription around which is—Georgius, D. G. Mag. Bri, Fra. Et. Hib. Rex. On the opposite side is a Rose—the inscription, Rosa, Americana, 1722. Utile Dulci. It probably is a coin of one of the Old Thirteen Colonies. Another of these coins was found in April, 1835, in digging a garden in Washington; Pensis, bordering on Brook County, Virginia.—J. M.

General Abstract of the Bill of Mortality for the City of Boston, from January 1, 1837, to January 1, 1838, agreeably to the Records kept at the Health Office.

1837.	*Under 1 year.*		*1 to 2.*		*2 to 5.*		*5 to 10.*		*10 to 20.*		*20 to 30.*		*30 to 40.*		*40 to 50.*		*50 to 60.*		*60 to 70.*		*70 to 80.*		*80 to 90.*		*90 to 100.*		*Unknown.*		*Still-born.*	*Total.*
	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.			
Jan.	18	11	7	8	8	8	3		0	4	6	7	8	6	9	8	6	4	2	10	4	8	1	2	0	2	1	0	10	163
Feb.	13	12	4	8	5	11	2	0	3	2	7	9	8	7	6	7	5	9	2	3	0	1	1	0	1	0	2	0	0	134
March	14	16	6	5	6	0	3	2	3	4	5	8	10	5	11	9	3	1	3	3	4	2	2	2	0	0	0	0	8	141
April	17	12	12	8	8	5	6	2	2	4	8	11	7	4	7	9	6	4	4	3	2	2	1	1	0	3	0	2	4	154
May	19	8	2	3	2	12	6	1	3	8	8	13	9	5	5	3	8	5	3	3	1	3	1	4	0	0	2	0	8	147
June	7	12	3	3	3	0	4	1	2	3	11	8	8	7	5	4	5	4	2	0	3	3	2	2	0	1	0	0	12	121
July	20	13	5	8	5	5	4	6	5	5	13	10	10	7	5	4	3	2	2	5	1	0	1	1	0	0	1	1	4	146
Aug.	30	29	17	20	8	5	3	0	3	8	13	9	11	12	3	7	2	2	8	4	0	2	1	1	0	1	0	0	5	204
Sept.	22	21	18	14	11	0	4	3	1	1	12	12	8	9	5	3	7	3	4	3	2	8	0	0	0	2	0	0	11	193
Oct.	11	12	7	9	10	9	4	1	3	8	6	10	8	6	6	3	2	2	2	2	1	3	1	0	0	0	1	0	14	141
Nov.	10	10	8	11	7	8	4	5	3	9	7	14	7	8	7	4	2	3	5	11	1	3	0	2	0	0	0	0	10	159
Dec.	13	8	9	9	6	0	1	1	3	5	12	7	7	11	12	2	6	3	2	4	3	2	1	2	0	0	1	2	8	140
	94	164	98	106	79	81	44	24	33	61	108	118	101	87	81	65	55	42	39	51	22	37	12	18	1	9	8	5	100	1843

The following are the Diseases, as far as they have been reported to the Health office, which have occasioned the Deaths in the City, during the past year.

Accidental,	13	Dyspepsy,	1	Jaundice,	1
Abscess,	3	Erysipelas,	6	Marasmus,	17
" in the Brain,	1	Feebleness at birth,	1	Measles,	23
" in the pleura,	1	Fever, intermittent,	3	Neuralgia,	4
" lumbar,	2	" inflammatory,	31	Old age,	69
Aneurism,	3	" typhus,	62	Palsy,	13
Angina pectoris,	1	" gastric,	3	Rheumatism,	3
Apoplexy,	31	" puerperal,	1	Scarlatina,	39
Asthma,	2	Gangrene,	11	Scirrhus of the Stomach,	1
Brain, diseases of,	15	Hæmorrhage,	3	Scrofula,	13
Burns,	12	" from the lungs,	3	Small-pox,	13
Cachexy,	15	" from the uterus,	1	Sorethroat,	10
Cancer,	14	Heart, diseases,	24	" ulcerated,	1
Catarrh,	1	Hernia,	1	Spine, disease of,	9
Child-bed,	18	Hooping cough,	19	Still-born,	100
Cholera,	10	Infantile diseases,	59	Suicide,	10
Cholera-infantum,	70	Inflammation,	4	Syphilis,	4
Cholic,	10	" of the brain,	23	Teething,	22
Consumption,	212	" of the heart,	2	Tumor of the brain,	2
Convulsions,	52	" of the pericardium,	2	" of the glands,	1
Croup,	44	" of the larynx,	3	" of the ovarium,	1
Delerium-tremens,	11	" of the lungs,	114	" on the lungs,	1
Diabetes,	2	" of the pleura,	18	Ulcer,	3
Diarrhœa,	11	" of the peritoneum,	1	Uterus, rupture of,	1
Diseases unknown,	269	" of the stomach,	4	Worms,	4
Dropsy,	42	" of the bowels,	41	Wounds,	1
" in the head,	59	" of the liver,	8		
" in the chest,	9	" of the kidney,	1		366
" in the abdomen,	2	" of the bladder,	1		485
Drowned,	23	" of the uterus,	2		992
Dysentery,	33	Influenza,	15		
" acute,	1	Intoxication,	17		1843
	992		485		

Population in 1835, 78,603;—1837, 80,325.

LIST OF PORTRAITS IN THE HALL OF THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

[Reference having been made on page 18, to some of the portraits, the Librarian believed, that, as the Hall has been much visited for the purpose of seeing them, it would be desirable to have a more general account of them; and therefore furnishes the following. Some biographical notices are added; which, though necessarily very brief, it is hoped are correct as to facts and dates.]

I. DISCOVERERS.

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS. ["Copy from an original, in the gallery of Medicis, at Florence." *Presented* by ISRAEL THORNDIKE, Esq.]

AMERICUS VESPUCIUS. [*A fine old painting.*]

CORTES. [Inscribed, "This picture of Cortes was brought from Europe by one of the Huguenot families, that settled in New England after the revocation of the Edict of Nantz; and bequeathed to the late Rev. John Foster, D. D., of Brighton. It is presented by his Widow, to the Massachusetts Historical Society."]

When presented, it was so soiled with age, that the lineaments were scarcely distinguishable; but they were restored by the skilful care of Col. Henry Sargent, some of the productions of whose pencil, also, ornament our walls.

SEBASTIAN CABOT. [*Copied by J. G. Chapman, from a remarkable portrait, by* HANS HOLBEIN. *Presented by the Hon.* T. L. WINTHROP.] The original picture was purchased in England, at a great price, by Richard Biddle, Esq., of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania; and he kindly consented to have this copy made for the Historical Society of Massachusetts. The expression is that of profound and even painful thought; and in the deeply marked lines, and dark hazle eye, there yet linger tokens of the force and ardor of character, of this extraordinary man.

The canvas bears this inscription, on the left side: EFFIGIES SEBASTIANI CABOTI, ANGLI, FILII JOHANIS CABOTI VENETI, MILITIS AURATI, PRIMI INVENTORIS TERRÆ NOVÆ SUB HENRICO VII ANGLIÆ REGE.—And on the right, SPES MEA IN DEO.

For other particulars of the original portrait, see the "Memoir of Sebastian Cabot," [by Mr. BIDDLE], Lond. 1831, p. 523–5.

II. WINSLOW FAMILY.

[These fine portraits were most obligingly deposited in our Hall, for the gratification of Visiters, by a descendant of the Family.]

Mrs. Alice Wensley. [*An original portrait; in the full dress and costume of olden time.*]

This lady was the daughter of Edmund Freeman of Plymouth; and, with his family, one of the passengers in the May-Flower. In 1639, she was married to Deacon William Paddy; and, after his death, became the wife of Samuel Wensley, Esq. A daughter of hers by her last husband, was wife of the Hon. Isaac Winslow, only son of Governor Josiah Winslow.

Governor Edward Winslow. [An original, painted in London in the year 1651, when he was agent for the Colony of Plymouth, in England; as was also that of Josiah Winslow, his son, who was with him. They have been ascribed to Vandyke, but it is said incorrectly. It is inscribed "A. D. 1651; Ætatis suæ 57."]

Governor Edward Winslow was born at Droitwich, Worcestershire, Grea Britain, on the 20th of October, 1595; and came to Plymouth with the pilgrims, in the May-Flower, in 1620; was assistant 13 years, and Governor in 1632, 1636, and 1644. He died near Jamaica, May 8th, 1655, aged 61, on his passage from England to the West Indies.

Governor Josiah Winslow. The eldest son of Gov. Edward Winslow; born in 1629; elected assistant, 1667; and Governor from 1673, seven years;—being the first Governor who was a native of New England.—He died, at Marshfield, December 18th, 1680, in the 52d year of his age.

He has been styled "the most accomplished man of his day, in New England."

Mrs. Penelope Winslow, wife of Gov. Josiah Winslow. She was the daughter of Herbert Pelham, Esq., who was nearly related to the Duke of New-Castle. She died in 1703, aged 73.

General John Winslow. He was son of the Hon. Isaac Winslow, who was several years the senior member of the Council of Massachusetts; grandson of Gov. Josiah Winslow; and born in 1701. In 1740, he commanded a company in the expedition against Cuba; and afterwards rose to the rank of Major General, in the British service. In 1755, he was second in command, in the expedition against Nova Scotia. The next year, he commanded at Fort William Henry, on Lake George.—He died at Hingham in 1774, at the age of 73.

Doctor Isaac Winslow. [*Painted by Johnson.*] He was son of Gen. John Winslow; born at Marshfield, April 27th, 1739; was a physician of eminence; and died October 3d, 1819, aged 81.

John Winslow, Esq. Son of Dr. Isaac Winslow; born July 19th, 1774; became an eminent Lawyer; and died at Natches, Mississippi, August 24th, 1822, where he had gone on account of his health; leaving three sons and three daughters. The two eldest sons, John and Pelham, have since deceased; the youngest, Isaac, resident in Boston, is the only survivor in this country, descended from the first Governor Winslow; through whose kindness, these family portraits

are deposited, as also a large round table, and an antique chair of Gov. Edward Winslow's, brought from England, in the cabin of the "May-Flower."

III. GOVERNORS AND LIEUTENANT GOVERNORS.

JOHN ENDICOT. [*This portrait was copied in* 1737, *by Smibert, from the original painting in* 1664. *Presented by the Hon.* F. C. GRAY.]

He was a native of Dorchester, England, and came to this country in 1628, as agent of a company who were establishing a Colony at Salem, on a territory purchased of the Plymouth company. In 1641, he was elected Deputy Governor; and, two years after, was placed in the chair of Chief Magistrate; and, with few intermissions, was Governor from 1649, till his death, March 15th, 1665, in the 77th year of his age.

JOHN WINTHROP. [*This portrait was copied by* C. OSGOOD, *from an original in the Senate Chamber. Presented by the Honorable* T. L. WINTHROP.]

He arrived, with the first Colonists of Massachusetts, June 12th, 1630, having a Commission as their Governor. To this office he was elected annually, with the exception of six or seven years, till his death in 1649, March 26, aged 63.—He kept a Journal of occurrences and transactions in New England, from 1630 to 1649; which has been published from the original manuscripts, with notes, by the Honorable James Savage, in two volumes, 8vo.

JOHN CLARK. [*A large original picture, marked* "Ætatis suæ 66. Anno 1675." *Presented by a descendant, Doctor* JOHN CLARK HOWARD, *of Boston.*]

He was born in England, Oct. 8th, 1609; received a learned education; was a Physician in London; married Elizabeth, daughter of John Hayes, Esq., of Bedfordshire; came to New England among the first settlers; was one of the founders of Rhode Island. In 1644, he formed a church at Newport, and became its pastor. In 1651, he was sent to England with Roger Williams, to promote the interests of the Colony; and remained, as agent for the Colony, till he procured the Charter in 1663. After his return, he was elected three years successively, Deputy Governor; and died April 20th, 1676, in the 67th year of his age.

JONATHAN BELCHER. [Inscribed "F. LIOPOLDT *pinxit* Anno 1729:" *Painted in London, while he was agent of the Province at the British Court.*] Son of the Honorable Andrew Belcher of Cambridge; born in January, 1681; graduated at Harvard College, 1699; Member of the Council of Massachusetts; agent of the Province at the British Court, 1729; Governor of Massachusetts and New Hampshire from 1730 to 1741; and afterwards of New Jersey; and died August 31st, 1757, aged 76.

THOMAS HUTCHINSON, LL.D. [*Supposed to be the only original portrait. Presented by* PETER WAINWRIGHT, *Jun., Esq.*]

Born in Boston, September 9th, 1711; graduated at Harvard College, 1727; Member of the Council; sometime Chief Justice of the Superior Court; Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts, from 1750 to

1770; and Governor from that time to 1774. He died in Great Britain, June 3d, 1780, aged 69.

He published a History of Massachusetts, from its first settlement until 1750, in 2 volumes, and a volume of Papers relative to its history. An additional volume has been published in London, 1828, from a manuscript preserved in the family, continuing the History till the commencement of the American Revolution.

JOHN WENTWORTH. [*Presented by* Sir JOHN WENTWORTH.] Born at Portsmouth, N. H., in the year 1671; was Lieutenant Governor of the Province, from 1717 to 1729; and died December 12th, 1730, aged 58.

WILLIAM PHILLIPS. [*An original painting. Presented by Hon.* JOSIAH QUINCY.] Born April 10th, 1750; deacon of the Old South Church 23 years;—for several years, Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts; he died May 26th, 1817, aged 77. An eminent Christian; and an active member of many charitable societies.

OLIVER WOLCOTT, LL.D., was born at Litchfield in Connecticut, in 1760, and was the son of OLIVER WOLCOTT, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. He graduated at Yale College in 1777, and joined the force raised to repel Tryon's expedition. He served in several subordinate offices, till 1780, when he removed to Hartford. There he was successively appointed one of the Committee of Pay table, Comptroller of Public Accounts, and Commissioner to settle the claims with the United States.

On the establishment of the Federal Constitution, he was appointed by President Washington, Auditor of the Treasury of the United States, in 1789, Comptroller in 1791, and Secretary of the Treasury in 1795. In this office he continued under Mr. Adams, till the close of 1800. He was then appointed one of the Circuit Judges under the new Judiciary act, afterwards repealed.

On losing this office, he established himself in New York as a merchant, and remained in business there, till 1817, when he removed to Connecticut, and was shortly after elected Governor. To this office he was re-elected, till 1826. In 1828, he again returned to New York, and died there in 1833, aged 73 years.

THOMAS LINDALL WINTHROP, LL.D. [*A fine portrait, painted by* C. OSGOOD. *Presented by several Gentlemen of Boston.*]

Graduate of Harvard College, 1780; late Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts; President of the Massachusetts Historical Society; and of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; the Philadelphia Philosophical Society; of the New York Historical Society; of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries at Copenhagen; of the Imperial Academy of Agrarian Economy at Florence; &c. &c.

IV. GENERALS.

WASHINGTON. [*Painted at Philadelphia by Wright. Presented by* ISRAEL THORNDIKE, Esq.]

LA FAYETTE, Marquis. [*Taken at Paris, for Mr. Jefferson. Presented by* Mrs. J. W. DAVIS.]

BENJAMIN LINCOLN. [*Painted by Sargent. Presented by several gentlemen of Boston.*

V. DISTINGUISHED LAYMEN.

JEREMIAH DUMMER. [*A large and admirable portrait, by Sir Godfrey Kneller.*]

A native of Boston, and a graduate of Harvard College in 1699, and early distinguished himself by extraordinary brilliancy of genius, and progress of knowledge. Designing to devote himself to the ministry, he entered the University of Leyden, and obtained the applause of the celebrated Lipsius, professor in that seminary. He afterwards abandoned the clerical profession, and became a civilian. He went to England, and in 1710, was appointed Agent for Massachusetts, and was an able defendant of its charter liberties. He died at Plastow, in 1739.

PETER FANUEIL. [*Presented by* Miss JONES, *of Boston.*] The founder of the Hall which bears his name; died March 3d, 1743.

BENJAMIN POLLARD. [*Presented by* ISAAC WINSLOW, Esq.] Former High Sheriff of the County of Suffolk; and first Colonel of the Boston Cadets.

CHARLES PAXTON. [*Presented by* PETER WAINWRIGHT, Esq.]

JOHN PHILLIPS, LL.D. [*Presented by* Hon. JOSIAH QUINCY.] Son of the Rev. Samuel Phillips of Andover; born December 27th, 1719; graduated at Harvard College in 1735; for several years a member of the Council in New Hampshire; April 21st, 1778, he with his brother Samuel Phillips of Andover, endowed the Academy in that town; and in 1789, gave to the Institution twenty thousand dollars. Of the Academy of Exeter, he was the sole founder; and it was incorporated in 1781, with a fund of fifteen thousand dollars. He died April, 1795, aged 76, bequeathing to this Academy, two thirds of all his estate; and one third of the residue to the Seminary at Andover.

JAMES ALLEN. [*Painted by Copley; presented, with the next, by the Widow of the late James Allen, Esq.*] Born in Boston, July 24th, 1739. He left Harvard College, after a residence of three years, to devote himself exclusively to polite literature. He was the author of several poems of much celebrity; and died in 1808, in his 70th year.

JEREMIAH ALLEN, Esq. [*Painted by Stewart.*] High Sheriff of the County of Suffolk.

JOHN DAVIS, LL.D. [*Painted by Cole. Presented by Hon.* T. L. WINTHROP.] Judge of the United States District Court of Massachusetts. Late President of the Massachusetts Historical Society; Member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; and of several other learned Societies.

VI. CLERGYMEN.

JOHN WILSON. [*A fine original portrait. Presented by* HENRY BROMFIELD, Esq.] First Minister of Boston; to which he came with Governor Winthrop in 1630. He died August 7th, 1667, aged 78.

JOHN BAILEY. [*Presented by his great grandson,* Mr. NATHANIEL WILLIS, *of Boston.*] He was born in Lancashire, Great Britain, Feb. 24th, 1644; was Minister at Limerick, in Ireland; came to New England about 1683; was settled at Watertown, October 6th, 1686;

removed to Boston, 1692, and became assistant Minister with Rev. Mr. Allen of the first Church; and died December 12th, 1697, in his 54th year.

INCREASE MATHER, D. D. [*A very old painting. Presented by* Mr. JOHN DUGAN.] Minister of the North Church in Boston; and President of Harvard College. He died August 23d, 1723, aged 85.

SAMUEL PHILLIPS. [. . . *Presented by Hon.* JOSIAH QUINCY.] He was Minister of the South parish in Andover; and died June 5th, 1711, in the 82d year of his age.

WILLIAM WELSTEAD. Minister of the New Brick Church, Boston; died April 20th, 1753, aged 58.

GEORGE BERKLEY, D. D. [*Painted by Smibert, on his passage to Newport, Rhode Island. Presented by* THOMAS WHETMORE, *Esq. of Boston.*] He was born March 12th, 1684, at Kilcrin in Kilkenny, Ireland; educated at Trinity College, Dublin; was Dean of Derry, and afterwards Bishop of Cloyne; came to Newport, R. I., in 1729, on his way to establish a College in one of the Islands of Bermuda; resided there two years and a half, when he returned. He was a distinguished benefacto · to Yale College, and died at Oxford, Great Britain, January 14th, 1753, being nearly 69 years of age.

THOMAS PRINCE. [*Presented by the Hon.* JONATHAN PHILLIPS.]

He was a native of Middleborough, and graduated at Harvard College, in 1707. After studying theology, he visited England, and preached at Coombs, where he was invited to settle; but he preferred to return to America. He returned to Boston in 1717, having been absent about seven years; and was ordained Pastor of the Old South Church, October 1st, 1718, and labored there, with great popularity and usefulness, till his death, October 22d, 1758. He published a valuable Chronological History of New England; and made large collections for a civil and religious history of it, in manuscripts and books. These were kept in an apartment of the tower of the Old South Church, and called "The New England Library." The manuscripts were principally destroyed by the British, at the early period of the Revolutionary war, and several of the books were taken away; part of those that remained, are now deposited in the library of the Historical Society.

CHARLES CHAUNCY, D. D. [. . . . . *Presented by* JOSEPH WOODWARD, *Esq.*] He was born at Boston, January 1st, 1706; graduated at Harvard College in 1721; and ordained Pastor of the First Church in Boston, in 1727, where he labored till his death, in 1787, in the 83d year of his age. He was eminent for his talents, learning, and love of liberty, civil and religious.

SAMUEL COOPER, D. D. [*Painted by Copley. Presented by Rev.* CHANDLER ROBBINS.] Born at Boston, Massachusetts, March 28th, 1725; graduated at Harvard College, in 1743; and in 1746, ordained pastor of the Brattle Street Church. After an unusually popular ministry of near 37 years, he died December 29th, 1783, in the 59th year of his age.

JOHN CLARKE, D. D. [*Original portrait, painted and presented by Col.* HENRY SARGENT.] Born at Portsmouth, N. H., April 13th, 1755; graduated at Harvard College in 1774; ordained pastor of the first Church in Boston, as colleague with the Rev. Dr. Chauncy, July

8th, 1788; and deceased April 1st, 1798. [*See more in the Historical Collections*, Vol. VI, 1—9.]

Jeremy Belknap, D. D. [*Painted by Sargent. Presented by several members of the Society.*] Born at Boston, June 4th, 1744; graduated at Harvard College, 1762; ordained pastor of the Church in Dover, N. H., February 18th, 1767; installed in the Presbyterian Church in Boston, April 4th, 1787; and deceased June 20th, 1798, aged 54.

Besides the publication of several sermons and religious tracts, he was the author of "the History of New Hampshire," in 3 volumes; of the "American Biography" in two volumes; and of "a discourse before the Massachusetts Historical Society," of which he was the founder, "on the completion of the third century, from Columbus' discovery of America." [*For a biographical memoir, See Collections of the Historical Society*, Vol. VI, p. 10—18.

VII. AGED WOMEN.

Ann Pollard. [*Presented by* Isaac Winslow, *Esq.*] Wife of William Pollard, of Boston. She deceased December 6th, 1725, aged 105 years. This portrait was taken, when she was 103 years old.—"She left of her offspring 130." She used to relate that she went over in the first boat that crossed Charles river, in 1630, to what has since been called Boston; that she was the first that jumped ashore, and she described the place as being at that time, "very uneven, abounding in small hollows and swamps, and covered with blueberry and other bushes."

Mrs. Mary Davis. [*Presented by the Rev.* Dr. Bentley *of Salem.*] On the back of this painting is the following record, but without dates; and it is all that we have been able to find respecting this old lady.

"Mrs. Mary Davis, aged 117.—She had three husbands, by whom she had nine children. She had fifteen grand-children; 215 great-grand children; 800 great grand children's children. At 104 years, she could do a good day's work at shelling corn; at 110 she sat at her spinning wheel. She was driven from the eastward (Maine), 40 years."

ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF DONATIONS.

The thanks of the Massachusetts Historical Society are presented for the following donations.

T. M. HARRIS, *Librarian.*

List of Donations, from July 27th, 1837, to July 27th, 1838.

Report on the Geology of Maine, by Dr. C. T. Jackson, 8vo, Augusta, 1837. *Presented by Hon. T. L. Winthrop.*

Compend of Moral Philosophy, by Rev. Charles Morton, in Manuscript. *Hon. John Pickering.*

Eulogy on James Madison, Boston, 1836; and oration on the life and character of La Fayette. 8vo, Washington, 1835; by Hon. J. Q. Adams. *The Author.*

Report of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries at Copenhagen, and their printed Letter. 8vo, 1836. *Professor Rafn.*

Annual Report of the American Education Society, for May, 1837. *Rev. Dr. Cogswell.*

Documents of the First Session of the 23d Congress; 18 volumes. *A. O. Dayton, Esq., Secretary of State.*

Letter to Major G. Mackay, from T. Walley, John Joy, and H. Hill; June 17th, 1769, (Manuscript). *Mr. Joseph J. Couthoy.*

Profile of Mr. Thomas Wallcut. *His Nephew, the Rev. R. F. Walcutt.*

Journal of Essex County Natural History Society. *Ichabod Tucker, Esq.*

American Quarterly Register, for August. *Rev. Dr. Cogswell.*

J. W. Toomer's Oration at the first Centennial of the South Carolina Society; March 28th, 1837. *The Society.*

Collections of the New Hampshire Historical Society, vol. 5. *The Society.*

Acts of the 61st General Assembly of New Jersey. *The State.*

North American Review for July, 1837. *Rev. Dr. Palfrey.*

Parchment Commission from George II, to Benning Wentworth, as Governor of New Hampshire. *Hon. John Pickering.*

Sir Grenville Temple's Travels in Greece and Turkey. 2 vols. 12mo, 1836. *Hon. T. L. Winthrop.*

History of Rehoboth, by L. Bliss, Jun. 8vo, Boston, 1836. *The Author.*

Gazetteer of the United States, by J. E. Worcester. Andover, 1818, 8vo. *The Author.*

Pulaski vindicated, by Col. Paul Bentalon. Baltimore, 1824, 8vo. *The Author.*

Catalogue of the Library of the Antiquarian Society, Worcester, 1837, 8vo. *The Society.*

Inaugural Discourse, by Rev. Jasper Adams, Geneva, N. Y., 1827, and Elements of Moral Philosophy, Cambridge, 1837. *The Author.*

Dr. Beck's Eulogium on Simeon de Wett, Albany, 1835, 8vo. Barnard's Address before the Albany Institute, Albany 1836; Catalogue of Amherst College, 1836. *Dr. Jacob Porter.*

Address before the American Historical Society, by Hon. Levi Woodbury. Washington, 1837. *The Author.*

List of persons, copartnerships, and corporations taxed in Boston, 1836. A volume of rare tracts, relating principally to Major General Ludlow. 1691—1696, 4to. *I. P. Davis, Esq.*

A box of papers, relating principally to Indian affairs, preserved in the family of Col. Israel Williams, at Hatfield.
John Williams, Esq. of Conway.

Rev. John Cotton's Exposition of the 13th Chapter of Revelations. London, 1635, 4to. *J. F. Fisher, Esq., of Philadelphia.*

Four tracts, in the Chickasaw, Choctaw, Muskokee, and Osage language. Utica, 1831. *William Gibbs, Esq.*

North American Review, for Oct. 1837. *Professor Palfrey.*

History of Kennebunk Port, 1837. *Captain Charles Bradbury.*

Twenty numbers of the Political state of Great Britain. 1716—1732.
Mr. S. G. Drake.

Documents of the 2d Session of the 24th Congress. (12 Volumes).
J. Forsyth, Secretary of State.

A volume of curious tracts. 1670—1742. 12mo.
Rev. R. F. Wallcutt.

A file of the Rhode Island Republican, [containing a series of communications, relative to the History of Rhode Island; written by Bull, Esq., descendant of Gov. Bull.] 56 Numbers. *I. P. Davis, Esq.*

Sermon at the ordination of Rev. John Parkman in Greenfield, Oct. 11th, 1837, by Rev. Francis Parkman, D. D. *The Author.*

Discourse on the evidence that the American Indians are descendants of the lost tribes of Israel. By M. M. Noah. *The Author.*

Dr. George Hayward on diseases of the knee joint, 1837. Rev. H. Coleman's sermon on the times, 1837. George A. Stevens's Address to the Juvenile Houses' Association for the suppression of prophanity, 1837. Rev. G. Whitney's sermon on the moral and religious uses of Mechanical exhibitions. Annual Report of the blind Asylum, 1837. J. D. Green's address before the Boston Phrenological Society. Annual Report of the Seaman's Aid Society. *Rev. Alexander Young.*

Ten, various Addresses and Reports. *Lemuel Shattuck, Esq.*

American Almanac for 1838. *J. E. Worcester.*

History of Massachusetts, from July, 1775, to 1789 inclusive. By Alden Bradford, Esq, Boston, 1825, 8vo. History of Massachusetts for 200 years. [From 1620 to 1820. By Alden Bradford, Boston, 1835.
The Author.

American Quarterly Register for November, 1837.
Rev. Dr. Cogswell.

History of Boston, by Caleb H. Snow, Boston. 1835.
Hon. T. L. Winthrop.

Historical causes and effects. By William Sullivan, Esq., Boston, 1837. *The Author.*

Address to the Massachusetts Horticultural Society, on the 9th Anniversary, by Hon. William Lincoln, Esq., 1837. *The Author.*

First exhibition and fair of the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanic Association; with Governor Everett's Address, 1837. *Gov. Everett.*

Opinions on speculative Masonry, by James C. Odiorne. Boston, 1830. *The Author.*

Documents of the first Session of the 25th Congress. (4 Volumes). *J. Forsyth, Secretary of State.*

Dudleian Lecture Sermon. May 14th, 1834, by Rev. Alvan Lamson. *The Author.*

Rev. Mr. Lunt's Christmas discourse, 1837. Rev. J. Pierpont's discourse at the Hollis Street Church, Dec. 3d, 1837. Rev. W. G. Eliot's discourse at the dedication of the First Congregational Church, at St. Louis. Tribute to the memory of Rev. Noah Worcester, D. D., by Rev. W. E. Channing. Sermon at the Ordination of Rev. J. F. Sargent, by Rev. W. P. Greenwood, 1837. *Rev. Alexander Young.*

History of Ferdinand and Isabella, by W. H. Prescott. Boston, 1838. 8vo. 3 vols. *The Author.*

Reports of the Engineers of the Western Railroad Corporation, 1838. *Josiah Quincy, Jr.*

Twelfth Annual Report of the Prison Discipline Society, 1837. Considerations on the Eastern diocese, 1837. *Rev. Alexander Young.*

Refutation of the pretended claim of William Vans. Boston, 1837, 2 vols. 8vo. Dorchester Controversy: a collection of papers. Boston, 1812. Visit to England, by Rev. John Codman. Boston, 1836, 12mo. *Rev. Dr. Codman.*

Report of a Committee appointed to continue Meteorological observations on the 21st of March, June, September and December, 1836, and 1837. *Doctor Jacob Porter.*

Governor Belcher's letter book for the years 1747, 1748, fol. *American Antiquarian Society.*

Military papers of Col. Moses Greenleaf, during service in the American Revolution. *His son, Simon Greenleaf, Esq.*

Fac simile of the Declaration of Independence, on a large sheet. *Lieutenant Hood.*

Gov. Hutchinson's Collection of papers relating to the History of the Massachusetts Bay. 8vo. Boston, 1769. *Alden Bradford, Esq.*

North American Review for January, 1838. *Professor Palfrey.*

American Quarterly Register, Vol. x, No. 2. February, 1838. *Doctor Cogswell.*

History and proceedings of the House of Lords, from the Restoration in 1660, to the end of 1740, (*eight volumes* 8vo), and of the House of Commons, to 1760, (*nineteen volumes*). *Hon. T. L. Winthrop.*

Sermon on the close of a Century since the erection of the Episcopal Church in Newburyport, by Rev. James Morss. 8vo. 1758. *Edward S. Rand, Esq.*

Address before the Norfolk bar, Feb. 23d, 1837, by James Richardson, Esq. *Joseph Willard, Esq.*

American Quarterly Register, for February, 1838. *Rev. W. Cogswell.*

Sermons on the mystery of godliness, by Rev. John Barnard, Boston, 1730. The Sham Patriot unmasked, 1806; Discourse before the Humane Society, 1787, by Rev. Dr. J. Lathrop. Burgesdicius' Logic, 1680, and Shepard's Sound Believer, 1742. *Rev. Mr. Sibley.*

Whitehall's Behemoth arraigned, in answer to Hobbes. London,

1600. Manuscript Sermons, by Rev. Mr. Phillips, of South Andover. Manuscript Sermons (writer unknown), and a Sermon on these bad times, 1837. *Rev. S. J. May, Scituate.*

Dissertation on the Chinese system of writing, by J. S. Du Ponceau. Philadelphia, 1838, 8vo. *American Philosophical Society.*

Governor Belcher's letter book (to complete a set). 1750—1752, folio. *N. G. Snelling, Esq.*

Columbian Centinel, 1834, 1835. Boston Daily Advertiser, 1836, 1837, 2 volumes; Daily Advertiser and Patriot, 1836; and Daily Centinel and Gazette, 1836, 1737, (*half-bound*). *Hon. T. L. Winthrop.*

Discourse occasioned by burning the effigy of the Stamp-men in New London, Connecticut, 1765. *I. P. Davis, Esq.*

History of the Colony of New Haven, by Edward R. Lambert, 1838. *The Author.*

History and antiquities of New Haven. By J. W. Barber, 1831. *The Author.*

Discourse on the life and character of N. Bowditch, LL.D., by Rev. Alexander Young, 1838. *The Author.*

Large Map of Maine, by Moses Greenleaf, Esq., 1815, (colored to indicate the source of titles, grants, &c. and the progress of settlement. Plan of the town of Portland, as originally granted to the settlers; and Catalogue d'ouvrages sur l'Histoire de l'Amerique, et en particuluier sur celle du Canada: par J. B. Fairbault. Quebec, 1837. *Simon Greenleaf, Esq.*

Sermon on the death of Joseph Bradlee, Esq., by Rev. N. L. Frothingham, 1838. *Rev. Alexander Young.*

North American Review, for April, 1838. *Professor Palfrey.*

Address at Concord, N. H., before the Female Anti-Slavery Society, Dec. 25th, 1837, by Nathaniel P. Rogers; with the 3d Annual Report, by Mary Clark. *Miss Mary Clark.*

Legislative documents of the Massachusetts General Court, during the Session of 1838. *Legislature of Massachusetts.*

American Archives, fourth Series, Vol. 1. Washington, D. C., 1837, folio. *Peter Force, Esq.*

Narrative of the shipwreck of Horace Holden, in 1832, on one of the Pelew Islands, 12mo, Boston, 1838. *Hon. John Pickering.*

Thirty Pamphlets, principally relating to Boston. *Lemuel Shattuck, Esq.*

Collections of the Rhode Island Historical Society, vol. 4th, 1838. *Dr. T. H. Webb.*

Two Sermons preached at Grafton, Nov. 15th, 1772; being the last delivered in public there, by Rev. Aaron Hutchinson, their Pastor. Boston, 1773. *William Brigham, Esq.*

Sermons by the Rev. John Disney, D.D. vol. 3d and 4th, London, 1816. Outlines of a penal code, by John Disney, Esq., London, 1826. And an original blank Stamp-Act paper. Original letters, to and from Thomas Hollis, Esq. *John Disney, Esq., of London.*

Eulogium, delivered at the reinterment of the remains of Christopher Columbus, on the 13th of January, 1796; by Don Joseph Augustin Cabellero, in the Cathedral Church at the Havana, Cuba. [The original copy from which the Address was delivered, in the beautiful handwriting of the Orator.] *George Knight, Esq.*

Bonner's Plan of Boston, 1722. Captain Cyprian Southack's Charts

of the North East coasts and West Indies, with copies of letters to Earl Bellamont and others, 1696-7 to 1700. Cantemir (Prince), History of the Ottoman Empire, translated by Tindal. fol. Lond. 1734. [College. Leo Modena's History of Africa, translated by Pory, fol. Lond. 1600. Hanway's History of the British trade over the Caspian Sea, 4to, 3 Vols. Lond. 1753. Boyle's Usefulness of Experimental Philosophy. 4to, Oxford, 1663. Gervase Markham's treatises on Husbandry, &c., &c. 4to. Lond. 1631. Cowell's Interpreter of Law Terms and Words, 4to. Camb. 1607. Bishop Wilkins' Life and Works. 2 vols. 8vo. Lond. 1802. Spectacle of Nature. 8vo. Vol. 2d. Lond. 1737. Quesnell's Reflections on the New Testament, translated. 8vo. 6 vols. 1719. Polygraphic Dictionary. 8vo. Lond. 1735. 2 vols. Oldmixon's British Empire. 8vo. 2 vols. Lond. 1741. Ethan Allen's Oracles of reason. 8vo. 1784. Brookes's Gazetteer. 8vo. 12th ed. Montrose, 1805. De La Pallue's Idée du Monde. 12mo. 3 vols. 1787.

Family of the late William Taylor.

EMENDATA ET ADDITAMENTA.

[The following emendations and additions were presented in relation to our volumes by Alden Bradford Esq. L. L. D., one of the earliest members of this Society, and whose Historical researches and publications justly make his statements and corrections highly important]

Boston, October 24th, 1836.

In some late researches which I have been making, I had frequent occasion to consult the volumes of the Historical Collections. And I have found much valuable information, relating to the early history of New England, and especially of Massachusetts. But some mistakes and errors, perhaps typographical in part, were detected; which, as these volumes will probably be quoted hereafter, as authority, in deciding questions in chronology and biography, I have thought it important to notice. I am aware they are not very material, and some of them may be considered *nugæ;* yet as accuracy in all such cases, is desirable with the antiquarian, I offer some corrections; which the Society will make such use or disposition of as they may deem proper.

With great respect &c.

Alden Bradford.

The Secretary of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

Volume I, First Series, page 204, *Shone* should be Shove: perhaps an error of the press. Mr. Shove was minister of Taunton; at the date of the account, Sept. 1674. In page 192 of Vol. ix. he is called *Shore;* which may also be an error of the press. Page 251 of Vol I. for 1616, it should be 1716. Vol. II. page 43, for August 14th, in margin, it should be June 30th. Vol. III. page 242, Johnson began to build on Boston side in September, not November: for he died September 30th. Same page *Dudley* was probably not among the *first* settlers of Boston.

His early abode, next after Charlestown, seems to have been the New Town. Page 15,same Vol. it should be *1639, not 1739; and arrows instead of errors, page 28. *Reayne*, no doubt should be Keayne: see pages 47 and 48 of same Vol. Page 36 of III Vol. it should probably be Oldham, not Culdom. Page 45, should read, great injury both to you, &c. Page 46, I presume *Allden* means Robert, and not John, see 48th page. Same page, 48, Thorned should probably be Thornel, or Thornhill. * Page 108, the date should be 1748, not 1784.

Vol. V. 216 page, 1634 must be an error—no doubt it should be 1636. Vol. VII, 268 page, 1608 has generally been given for the events, instead of 1610, as it is here given. Vol. VIII, Plymouth had not a *charter* from the king, though often promised, and once ordered to be made out.

Vol. IX, page 18, for Grove, I think it should be Graves. Same page, Dorchester is said to be the first church. Not only was Plymouth before it, but Salem also. Perhaps it is proper to place Dorchester next after Salem: for it was formed in March, in England; and the Dorchester people arrived last of May. Page 19; the church gathered in Charlestown was not, strictly speaking, divided till 1632, after Mr. James came, when it was made a distinct church; but the majority being on the Boston side, as early as November, the meetings for religious worship were held on that side for the inhabitants in both places. Vol. IX, 21, desired, instead of *denied*. Page 41, 1684, should be 1584. Page 20, it may be proper to notice that Roger Williams was not of the company of 1630, nor was he invited into the Colony. Page 149, Shaumut was settled in September; and in November was more populous or wealthy than Charlestown, as appears by the tax. Page 75, 8th line from the bottom, read 1671 and 176, 12th line from the top read 70. Page 179, it is believed that 1647 should be 1655. Cotton Mather says about 1655, seventeen scholars left the College because they were compelled to lose a great part of a year; but many of them became useful in the church and commonwealth. Brimsmead and Robinson were among these. And 1660, should be 1666—Mr. Brimsmead was preaching in Plymouth about 1660. Page 183, Mr. Robinson was about thirty-five years minister in Duxbury; he was settled in 1702, and removed to Lebanon, Connecticut, in 1737-8, where he resided several years before he died. Mr. Wiswall was minister of Duxbury about twenty-five or six years, having been settled there not before 1676. Mr Holmes, his predecessor died in December, 1675. Page 199, not Nantasket, but Narragansett.

Vol. X, 2, not Broom, but Brown, elder in the church of Watertown —error of press no doubt. Page 8, line 4, taught* for thought. Page 17, it should be 1635, not 1685. Page 25, Matthews was also charged with heresy, and imprudent speeches by some of the Malden church; for which they complained of him to the magistrates. It was *merely* a censure on the church for not first consulting the magistrates before inviting him. Page 32, Providence, not prophecies. Page 34, 1804, not 1604, dire not due. Page 28, 1656, not 1636.

Vol. X, 168, there is quite a blunder, though the statement was made by Dr. Chauncey. Peter Bulkley, who was graduated in 1660, was an eminent statesman, and a son of Rev. Peter Bulkley, first minister of Concord, the author of a volume with title of Gospel Convenant. Page 173, it should be 1637-8. The true time was March, 1638. Page 206,

* The errors thus * marked do not exist in the *second* edition, 1810 Ed.

Chronological table, Williams was banished from Massachusetts Jurisdiction December, 1635; and went to Providence the Spring following.

Vol. I, 2d Series, page 1; Leonard Hoar died in 1675. Page 29, the gift of £1000 to the Colony was by Dr. Wilson, a brother of Rev. Mr. Wilson of Boston.

Vol. II, 94. Would it not be more correct to place Watertown church in June, when the covenant was adopted, according to Cotton Mather? Johnson makes it the 7th, but it was as early as Boston, formed first in Charlestown. Page 91, Boston church should date from 1630, as already observed, and Charlestown in 1632. Page 106. Randall is probably a mistake for Randolph. Page 107, near the bottom, 1636, not 1630. Page 164, 1629 should be 1630. Page 81, and 83. Is not 198, for the number of ships in the first twelve or thirteen years, more correct than 298? Some of the ships brought 120, and some even a greater number; 298 would give nearly 30,000 or quite; but the number in that time was about 20, or 21,000. Let it be remembered also, that of the seventeen ships said to have brought passengers in 1630, one of them, the Handmaid, came by way of Plymouth, and brought passengers to that place, and therefore probably, did not bring a great number for the Bay; and one left England in February, probably, not with *many* passengers. As there are two numbers mentioned, that which is the most probable should be preferred. And some of the larger ships had 200 passengers.

Vol. III, page 123; the date should be 1630. Page 147, not cold, nor gold, but *could*. Page 151, not forest, but fort.

Vol. VI, 42d page, for 30,000, I suggest 3000, as more probable. Page 157, Norris, not Morris. Vol. V, 68 page. Mr. Cushman had probably hired the vessel—he was not the captain. Page 99, Monamoy, (Chatham) not Merrimack. Page 115, not designs, but diseases probably. Page 260, crowns, not drowns. Page 335, R. Williams did not go to Providence to settle till Spring, 1636. He went first only to Pawtucket. Page 429, Winslow, not Winthrop.

Vol. VII, 1 and 11th page. Should it not be Fiske, and neither Fish, nor Friske? Page 28, Mr. Wilson was first settled in Dorchester and then in Medfield.

Vol. VIII, 101 page. Mr. L. probably was Gov. Leverett; from what is said in one or two preceeding paragraphs. Gov. Dudley died in 1665. This could not be Joseph, just then left College, and Thomas, only twelve years before, was not probably the person intended. It could not be Thomas Danforth, Deputy Lt. Governor, for he was then at the head of the *Whig* party, and much opposed to the commissioners of Charles II, and to an extensive exercise of the royal prerogative. Was it Richard Dummer of Newbury? He was sometime one of the magistrates, and as late as this period. Page 100, Mr. E. might be Rev. Mr. Eliot; for several of the clergy attended this meeting; and Mr Eliot was sometimes a *politician*.

Vol. IX, page 9, it is probably Sagadahoc and Monhegin near its mouth, are here intended. Page 37, by Auguam, Agawam is meant probably. Page 28, R. G. *perhaps* was Richard Greene, mentioned page 82 of same volume, who had the charge and oversight of Weston's plantation at Wassaguscus. It is probable he was a man of some note and observation.

Vol. X, 2d Series, Chronological Table. The first date is an error, founded in a mistake of Vol. V, page, 8, near the bottom. It was not the

Cabots, but Columbus who discovered Cuba, Hispaniola, &c. in 1492. The MS. *no doubt* read thus—In 1497, he (Sebastian Cabot) with his father John Cabot, sent out by commission of Henry VII, ranged a great part of this unknown region, or coast, and (in *some years following;* a mistake for it was the same year as above,) discovered many places from 40th degree of South to 67th of North latitude; whereas, Columbus contenting himself with the riches of Cuba, Hispaniola and other Islands which he fortunately fell upon in the year 1492. But he did not discover the main land till 1498, a whole year after Sebastian Cabot had been upon the continent—Whether there is a mistake in Hubbard, when he says, from 40th degree of South to 67th of North; or whether it was only meant from North latitude 67 to the South, to 40th degree, I shall not attempt to decide.

Page 270, General Index. John Doane was not a printer; nor does Prince authorize the assertion. He says—that the printer of Morton's *Memorial* probably, called Doane, *Dove* by mistake. See Vol. VII, 83 of Prince's Annals. Page 307, General Index. It is a mistake, that the Countess of Lincoln ever intended to come to Plymouth, (so far as known), see Vol. V, 47. Hubbard says only, that Mr. Wincob, (who was of the family of the Countess of Lincoln) at first intended to go with the Leyden people.

Page 342. Pessacus was not a Sachem of Massachusetts, but of Narragansett, see Vol. VI, 452d page.

Vol. VII, page 41. The punctuation is such as to lead any one not acquainted with the history of the churches and pastors, in early times, into great mistakes. It would be more intelligible if it read thus, (as no doubt it was meant to be)—"Among whom were the Rev. Elders of Boston, Mr. Cotton and Mr. Wilson; Mr. Allen of Charlestown; Mr. Shephard and Mr. Dunster of Cambridge; Mr. Knowles of Watertown; Mr. Allen of Dedham; Mr. Eliot of Roxbury; Mr. Mather of Dorchester."

Vol. I, 3d Series page 211. 1634 cannot be correct—it was in winter of 1635-6, or spring of 1636.

Vol. II, 267 page, Bristol should be added to Plymouth and Barnstable Counties, as composing Plymouth Colony.

Vol. III. The Journal of Joselyn is so full of mistakes and errors, and some calculated to lead *tyros* astray, though many of them of little consequence, I cannot undertake to notice them in this statement, not intended to be so long as it is. But it would seem that as the Society has published it in their volumes, they would take measures to prevent its leading any astray.

General Index, page 320, X Vol. 2d Series. It is a mistake to say Mr. Matthews of Lynn, the place referred to does not authorise it. A Mr. *Line* was witness against Mr. Matthews.

Dudley says there were seventeen ships came to Massachusetts, with passengers, in 1630; and it is implied they all belonged to the company with Winthrop; which is not precisely correct. Only *eleven* ships came with Winthrop, who arrived in June or July. Capt. Pierce came more than a month before Winthrop; but brought none of the company; and yet he might have left a few persons at Salem. The John and Mary brought the Dorchester people, who, though they became united here, were not of Winthrop's company in England. The Handmaid came to Plymouth late in the season, and had very few for Massachusetts. The Gift arrived in August, after a passage of 13 weeks, but had some of the

Massachusetts. Different early writers will be reconciled by this statement; and it is important, chiefly, in this respect.

It will not perhaps, be impertinent here, to notice some of the contradictory accounts, as to the number of ships with passengers, which came from England to Massachusetts during the first eleven or twelve years, exclusive of those with Endicott in 1628. It is said by one very early writer, (Johnson) that there were 198 ships; and again he says there were two hundred and ninety eight; and the last statement has usually been given by later writers. There is a misprint in one of these statements; and probably in the last. The accounts of the number of passengers have been more uniform; and the estimate gives 21,000.

In the eleven ships with the Winthrop company there were about 1500; and with Higginson, in 1629, there were 300, beside 60 women and young children. Prince says that some of the ships had 200 passengers and some 150, and 120, &c., though some had only 100. Now if each ship brought 120, or even 110, on an average, which is probable, (for the 11 ships with Winthrop brought 1500) than 198 would bring 21,280; and 298 ships would have but 70 each on an average. Besides it is not probable that 28, or 30 ships a year came with passengers for 10 or 11 years; and two years of the eleven, but few passengers came over.

Vol. V, 2d Series, page 11. *Salterne* is inserted by conjecture. Prince and Belknap speak also of *Savalet*, who was often on the coast fishing, and for discoveries. See Belk. Biog. 320th page, I Vol.

Rev. Mr. Mellen, in his account of Barnstable, says Governor Hinckley, was a native of that town. And the writer of the description of Scituate, says he was born in Plymouth or Scituate. Neither of these are correct. He was born in England, 1618—and came over with his father, one of Rev. Mr. John Lothrop's church, in 1634, at the age of sixteen.

In IXth Vol. 2d Series, the editor conjectures, that the initials R. G. at the close of a letter to J. P. (John Peirce), indicate Richard Gardiner. Perhaps they indicate Richard Green, brother in law and agent of Thomas Weston, one of the merchant adventurers, and the person who made a settlement at Wessaguscus. See pages 28 and 82.

Vol. III, 1st Series, 242d page, the writer of an account of Boston, and generally very correct, says, "Isaac Johnson and others began a settlement at Boston, in November." Johnson died in September; and had fixed on Shawmut for his residence, and put up a house there before his death. And so many removed from Charlestown to Shawmut, that the religious public meetings on the Lord's days, were on that side of the river, for the inhabitants of both places; and so continued, till the fall of 1632, when the Charlestown people had a minister of their own, Mr. James, and became a separate and distinct church and society. Winthrop soon took up his residence in Boston; but Dudley did not. The date, 1632, for the first meeting house is perhaps a mistake, unless they worshipped in a private house for two years; which might be.

In Vol. VI, 3d Series, 4th page, Nathan Turner should be Nathaniel Turner. The Indian hostilities, as narrated from page 178, to the swamp fight on page 182, were all in 1675 and not in 1674, as there printed.

Vol. II, 2d Series, page 267, it is said, "The colony of Plymouth included the present counties of Plymouth and Barnstable, and part of Rhode Island." It also contained the county of Bristol.

APPENDIX.

LETTER FROM HONORABLE JUDGE DAVIS, RESPECTING ISAAC ALLERTON.

BOSTON, *August 6th*, 1838.

DEAR SIR,

Having been favored by you, with the perusal of the printed copy of Rev. Mr. Bacon's letter, intended to be included in the volume of the Historical Society's Collections, now in the press, I would submit to the Publishing Committee some further *addenda*, in reference to an inquiry, which that gentleman was requested to make, respecting the place in the modern city of New Haven, where Isaac Allerton's house was erected. There can be no doubt, that the Captain Isaac Allerton, mentioned in President Stiles's History of the Judges, who "came early and settled in New Haven, and built a grand house on the creek, with four porches," was the *Isaac Allerton* who came to Plymouth in the May-Flower, and was a most active, intelligent and distinguished associate in that memorable community. This is satisfactorily proved, as well as his ultimate settlement and death in New Haven, by Mr. Bacon's communications, in which he is sustained by Professor Kingsley, in a note to his interesting "Historical Discourse," recently delivered in New Haven.

"That this Isaac Allerton of New Haven," says Professor Kingsley "is the same who was at Plymouth, is evident from the circumstance, that in his will, he refers to his brother Brewster; and it appears from Morton's

Memorial, that Isaac Allerton, of Plymouth, married a daughter of Elder Brewster."

The place in the city of New Haven, corresponding to Allerton's location, is thus given by Rev. Mr. Bacon, in his letter of July 30th.

"In the town-plot of New Haven, the direction of the streets was determined by two creeks, both of which have now disappeared. The principal creek, was that from which Governor Eaton and his company appear to have landed. Near its margin stood the old oak, under which they worshipped. Along the bank of this creek, for a considerable distance, was marked out what is now called George Street, the south-western boundary of the 'nine squares.' This creek being filled up with the deposite, which is continually forming in our harbor, the tide was, many years ago, shut out by a dike, and nothing now remains of it but a minute rivulet which finds its way through the low grounds, between George Street and Meadow Street, on the one hand, and Morocco Street and Hill Street on the other. What is now State Street, the south-eastern boundary of the nine squares, was laid out along the other creek, the course of which is now shown by the Farmington Canal, from where it crosses Grand Street, to where it enters the harbor. Along these two creeks, and along the margin of the harbor between them, was what you have called 'the Piræus.' Allerton's house and home lot, must have fronted upon what is now Union Street, between Cherry Street on the north, and Fair Street on the south. I walked around the ground a few days ago, with Professor Kingsley, to see what might be learned from such a survey. The 'two acres,' if I remember right, which Allerton had there, are now thickly covered with houses, and the original conformation of the ground, is, of course, greatly changed; yet it is obvious, that when Allerton built his house there, it was just such a spot as would strike the fancy of a 'sea-captain.' There was a gradual but very considerable slope towards the harbor, on the south, and towards the creek on the west. The prospect now is obstructed, in every direction, by buildings, but then he must have had, from his upper windows, a fair view of a great part of the town, in one direction, and of the harbor and sound, even to Long Island, in

another, while, on the north, the fine bluff of East Rock, and very likely, that of West Rock, the refuge of the Regicides, were full in view."

It is to Allerton's old house, which was taken down in 1740, that the well known tradition, respecting the concealment of the Judges, by *Mrs. Eyres*, is to be referred. Whatever of fable there may be in some of the traditionary stories, on this subject, there appears no sufficient reason to doubt, that the fugitive Judges, Whalley and Goffe, did find temporary shelter and concealment in that house, in 1661. But the lady protectress, could not have been Mrs. Eyres. The mistress and owner of the house for life, at that time, was Mrs. Allerton, the widow of Isaac Allerton ;—her granddaughter, Elizabeth, afterwards Elizabeth Eyres, wife of Simon Eyres, was, in 1661 the perilous crisis with the Judges, not eight years of age, as appears by the record of her birth, certified by Mr. Bacon. She probably then lived with her grandmother, as Mr. Bacon conjectures, her father being absent, and if the Judges were sheltered in the house, might have been a witness, perhaps an assistant in the transaction, but certainly not a principal.

In these views, Mr. Bacon concurs. In his letter of July 30th, he says, "The inferences which, in your letter of the 24th inst., you derive from the traditions in Dr. Stiles's narrative, compared with the records, are the same which I had in my mind, upon reperusing the history of the Judges, after my letter was written."

An old plan of New Haven, taken in 1748, represents all the dwelling houses then standing in the town, among the rest *Simon Eyres's*, with a reference to *Isaac Allerton*, as original grantee of the lot. The plan contains a scale, and transferring the locality of that house, the substitute for Allerton's mansion, to a corresponding place in Buckingham's large plan of New Haven, published in 1836, the accuracy of Mr. Bacon's estimate, as given in his last letter, will be apparent. That letter contains the following postscript ; "I find from the records, what escaped my notice on a former search, that 'Simon, son of Simon Eyre, was born the 5th day of September, 1682.' This may be the one who occupied Allerton's homestead, in 1748, the great-grandson of the Plymouth Pilgrim."

We cannot but be grateful to Mr. Bacon, for the new and exact views which he has given, of an ancient worthy, in his latter days, whose honored repose, after a life of vicissitude and trial, we can thus assuredly contemplate in the beautiful city of New Haven.

Your friend and obedient servant,

JOHN DAVIS.

Rev. Dr. Harris, Chairman of Committee of Publication.

P. S. There is a misprint in the date of Mr. Bacon's letter, (p. 248). Instead of "15th Jan." it should be 15*th June*, and in p. 243, l. 4th from bottom, for "add" read "adds."

#966